UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
3 1761 00594950 8

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/certaintragicald01banduoft

(18)
315
587

# THE TUDOR TRANSLATIONS

EDITED BY

W. E. HENLEY

XIX

CERTAIN

TRAGICAL DISCOURSES OF

# BANDELLO

TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH BY

## GEFFRAIE FENTON

ANNO 1567

With an Introduction by

ROBERT LANGTON DOUGLAS

VOLUME I

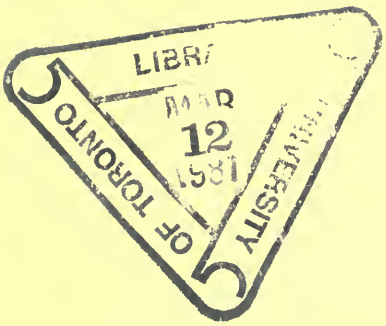
LONDON

Published by DAVID NUTT

IN THE STRAND

1898

7 1626
10 5 98




PQ
4606
Z34
1898
v.1

Edinburgh : T. and A. CONSTABLE, Printers to Her Majesty

TO

GEORGE MEREDITH

THESE ESSAYS IN AN ART

WHEREIN HIS ACHIEVEMENT

HAS MADE HIM

ILLUSTRIOUS

# INTRODUCTION

## I

ASARI, in a well-known passage, tells the story of the artistic awakening of the young Niccolò Pisano. The youth, he says, was at work one day in the Duomo at Pisa, when his attention was arrested by certain pieces of antique sculpture, 'spoils of marbles,' which the Pisan fleet had brought from Greece. It was, he would have us believe, the contemplation of these works of long-dead masters that led the sculptor's apprentice to become the exponent of a new manner in art, the inaugurator of a great artistic movement.

Modern critics have laboriously demonstrated the improbability of this story. They have shown that there are strong reasons for believing that it is one of those myths that owe their preservation to the credulity of the Aretine artist. And yet, whether it be a myth or not, it enshrines an eternal truth. In the form of allegory, it describes a natural process which is continually being repeated in the history of human civilisation; and, whatever its origin

INTRODUCTION

may be, it is of value as a representation of what actually occurred in Italy in the course of the three centuries that followed the birth of the Pisan sculptor.

The Renaissance

That great movement of human thought which we call the Renaissance had, as has often been explained, a dual character. It consisted both of a return to antiquity and a return to nature. The one movement was the necessary outcome of the other. The inevitable effect of the intelligent contemplation of the rediscovered works of classical antiquity upon the men of that age, was that it filled them with an insatiable curiosity, a consuming thirst for new knowledge. For it is a function of the true artist to 'plant eyes' in men, to stimulate their powers of observation by revealing to them, here and there, things hitherto unperceived by them, and, at the same time, to fill them with a desire to put to test the new capacities with which, through his instrumentality, they have become endowed.

Insatiable curiosity of the men of Renaissance

In Italy at the time of the Renaissance, this phenomenon was to be seen everywhere. Men went out from libraries and museums to look upon the world with new eyes, to discover there, not only things which their dead teachers had taught them to see, but much also that the sculptors and poets of Greece and Rome were themselves incapable of perceiving. And in regard to nothing did these men of the Renaissance display a more avid curiosity than about man himself. Not only were they eager to learn all that it was possible to know about the personages of classical antiquity; they were anxious, also, to view the men around them as they really were, and not in relation to an ecclesiastical system. They were especially interested in all

exhibitions of that quality of 'virtue' which the study of the classics had taught them to prize. INTRODUCTION

Full of the inspiration of new ideas, with new senses opened to them, painters and poets, historians and diarists, physiologists and philosophers, dramatists and novelists, sought to express what they saw and felt, and to satisfy in some measure the cravings of their fellow-countrymen. Of all these classes of workers, none appealed to a larger audience than the *novellieri*. In every town in Italy there sprang up writers who professed to relate stories of real life; and, everywhere, their works were eagerly read by the people. 'Virtue' The *novellieri*

As the movement of the Renaissance spread, the same insatiable curiosity began to show itself on all sides, with the result that the *novelle* of Italy soon found countless readers in France, and Spain, and England. Most of Bandello's tales were rendered into French by François de Belleforest, and his collection of *Histoires Tragiques* passed through many editions. Geoffrey Fenton, William Painter, and other Elizabethans translated these novels out of French into English, and in Ascham's day volumes of Italian love-stories were to be found 'in every shop in London,' where they commanded a ready sale. François de Belleforest Geoffrey Fenton and William Painter

They at once exercised a profound effect upon the development of our dramatic literature. It was not merely that the dramatists found in them suitable material for romantic tragedy. To the Italian novelists they owed a deeper debt than that. The contemplation of these vivid pictures of the free and passionate life of the Italians strangely stirred their senses, and made their sluggish Northern blood course more quickly through their veins. Our debt to the *novellieri*

INTRODUCTION

In reading the *novelle* they became filled with a sense of the vast and terrible possibilities of human existence which they had never known before. And thus, ultimately, a powerful stimulus was given to the imaginative reason. Nay, more! these volumes of novels, finding their way into every house, helped to prepare an audience for the dramatists. Thus it was that the *novella*, which, as Symonds says, 'struck the keynote of the Renaissance in Italy,' had so potent an influence on the most characteristic product of the English Renaissance—the Elizabethan drama.

Matteo Bandello

Amongst the *novellieri* of the *cinque-cento* Matteo Bandello stands pre-eminent. No other Italian writer of that age had a wider influence outside his own country: none was more popular amongst Englishmen. All the best stories in the second tome of Painter's *Palace of Pleasure* were taken from him, whilst Fenton's *Tragicall Discourses* is entirely composed of translations of his tales. These 'forreine reapportes' were soon known to all classes of our countrymen. Every one had heard the tragical histories of Rhomeo and Giulietta, of the Countess of Celant, and of the Duchess of Malfi.

## II

Matteo Bandello was born at Castelnuovo,[1] a little town situated in a fertile plain, 'near where the Scrivia pours its limpid waters into the Po.' The air of the place, he tells us, is as temperate as in any part of Lombardy, and 'its 'inhabitants,' he adds, 'are remarkable for their healthiness 'and longevity.' He came of a noble family which claimed

[1] *Bandello*, Novelle, Parte prima, Novella 23. See ed. Londra (Livorno), 1791-93, vol. ii. p. 154, *et seq.*

descent, but apparently without sufficient reason, from a Gothic chieftain, a certain Bandelchil, a follower, it was said, of Theodoric. In the year 1495, when he was in his fifteenth year, the young Matteo was placed under the care of his uncle Vincenzo,[1] who was at that time prior of the Dominican monastery of Santa Maria delle Grazie at Milan. He was that prior, so tradition says, whose portrait Leonardo painted for the head of Judas, because of his tiresome importunity. Nevertheless, whatever his faults may have been, Vincenzo was a popular ecclesiastic, revered by the members of his order, and on terms of friendship with most of the great Italians of his time. He was distinguished both as an administrator and as a controversialist, and his treatise on the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception is still quoted by theologians.[2]

INTRODUCTION

Vincenzo Bandello

At Milan, Matteo found himself at once in an environment that was congenial to one of his pleasure-loving temperament. The city, at that time larger than either London or Paris, and more wealthy than any other in Italy, was the seat of the most brilliant court in Europe. Its citizens were firm believers in the precepts of 'the libertine school of Cyrene'; and, until the storm of foreign invasion scattered their *lieta brigata*, life was for them one perpetual pageant. They were for ever courting new impressions of pleasure. Rich and novel things were brought to the city from the ends of the earth, from the New World and from farthest Ind. Artists and literary men, mimes and singers, flocked thither, attracted by the munificence of that ill-fated

Bandello at Milan

The luxurious life of the Milanese

[1] *Leandro Alberti*, De viris Illustribus ordinis Praedicatorum, 1517, lib. i. fol. 47, *et seq.*

[2] *Pusey*, Second Eirenicon, p. 372.

INTRODUCTION

Lodovico il Moro

Mæcenas of the *cinque-cento*, Lodovico il Moro. Pre-eminent amongst those to whom the Duke extended his patronage was the great Leonardo himself; and with him the young Bandello became acquainted in the years 1497 and 1498, when the Master, at the bidding of il Moro, was engaged in painting his *cenacolo* in the refectory of the Dominican house.

The Church of Santa Maria had been much resorted to by Beatrice d'Este; and in the month that followed her death her inconsolable husband caused a hundred torches to be kept alight there, and a hundred masses to be said for the repose of her soul. Lodovico himself was a frequent visitor at the monastery, and its prior was in high favour at court. Vincenzo's young nephew, therefore, with his agreeable manners and pleasant voice, soon became a popular figure in Milanese society. In his novels he has left us more than one picture of the free, luxurious life of the people of the city. He tells us much of their sumptuous banquets and of their trains of chariots overlaid with gold, 'worthy of an emperor's triumph.' He never tires of descanting upon the beauty of the ladies of Milan and the splendour of their apparel. 'When one of these appears at a palace door, it 'is,' he declares, 'as though one looked upon the Assump-'tion in the city of Venice.' Moreover, these fair dames were not less complaisant than beautiful. They were, he admits, not niggardly of their charms, but rather were 'much disposed to love and to be loved.' What wonder was it, then, that the youth of the place followed the oft-quoted Horatian maxim, and gave themselves up to 'dulces amores'; riding 'on barbs and jennets splendidly caparisoned from palace to palace'; after the manner of

Bandello's descriptions of Milanese society

the bee that goes about from flower to flower, drawing sweetness out of loveliness?

The young friar was indeed no ascetic, and it was not long before he put into practice the lessons taught in this school of Circe. It was in 1505 that Bandello first became a lover. In the summer of that year he set out for Rome, where he intended to join his uncle, who had then become General of the Dominican order. On his way thither he halted for a considerable time at Florence, staying at the Convent of Santa Maria Novella; and it was whilst he was in that city that he fell in love with a young girl named Violante, whose charms of character and person he celebrated in many sonnets. Bandello was a convinced Platonist, and it would not be fair to place too literal a construction on all the expressions to be found in his verses. Nevertheless, as he has himself told us, in one of his tales of illicit passion, that he had trodden the whole labyrinth of love, we do him no injustice in assuming that not all of his attachments were of that order popularly styled Platonic. His love for Violante was the great passion of his life. He never tired of singing of her grace and loveliness, of her rosy lips, of her fair hair, of her eyes that were like clear shining stars. 'She was so beautiful that heaven itself was jealous of her.' For one short year he enjoyed her love, and then she was suddenly taken from him.[1] But the remembrance of her beauty haunted him throughout a long life.[2] 'Thou

The school of Circe

Bandello's first love

The death of Violante

[1] *Bandello*, Rime, tratte da un codice della R. Biblioteca di Torino, e pubblicate per la prima volta, dal Dott. L. Costa, Torino, 1816, Sonetto xxxvi. p. 56. Sonetti cx. (p. 171) and cxli. (p. 213) also have reference to Violante's illness and death.

[2] *Bandello*, Canti xi. de le Lodi de la S. Lucretia Gonzaga di Gazuolo, etc., Reboglio, Agen, 1545, Canto vi.

INTRODUCTION

'hast traversed,' he says to himself in his old age, 'many 'seas, countries, and rivers':

'E sempre le Viole furon teco,
Perche il tuo cor se ne portare seco.'

He was with his uncle in Calabria when the news of Violante's death reached him. The shock was so great that the young friar became seriously ill; but he revived somewhat after that his royal friend, Beatrice of Aragon, full of pity for his distress, had administered to him a crushed emerald and other costly remedies. He was still far from well when another great calamity overtook him. His uncle Vincenzo, who had been to him as a second father, died, *postquam paucis diebus ægrotavit.* Robbed at once of his patron and his dear mistress, Matteo returned to Milan bearing a heavy heart in a sick body. He seems to have sought for distraction in political and literary pursuits. At any rate, in 1508 he went on a mission to the Court of France, and in the following year he published his first book, a Latin version of a novel by Boccaccio. It was not long before his fortunes again took a favourable turn. He was one of those beings to whom the capricious goddess 'displays even more than her accustomed mobility.' Now she showers upon him blow after blow. Now she makes his life all that he could wish it to be. But, on the whole, he must be regarded as singularly fortunate. He lived a variegated, dramatic life, full of incident and adventure. He was on terms of intimate friendship with the most beautiful and most cultured women of his age. He was brought into direct contact with its most notable personages, its princes and statesmen, its poets and painters,

The death of Vincenzo Bandello

Bandello's first book

A favourite of fortune

its philosophers and *savants*, its historians and strategists, its hierarchs and heresiarchs, its buffoons and courtesans. Francis the First and Lodovico il Moro, Bembo and Castiglione, Vittoria Colonna and Margaret of Navarre, Leonardo da Vinci and Luigi Alamanni, Guicciardini and Machiavelli, Giovanni delle Bande Nere and Prospero Colonna, Isabella of Mantua and Veronica Gambara, J. C. Scaliger and Aldo Manuzio, Calcagnino and Gonnella, Isabella da Luna and Caterina di San Celso—all these knew the popular Dominican, and nearly all had the pleasure of hearing from his own lips one of his inimitable tales. 'His whole life was a *novella*,' a story full of life and movement.

Bandello discovers his true vocation

He is especially to be envied, in that, whilst still a young man, he found what his true function was. It was a woman, an intimate friend of his, Ippolita Sforza, the wife of Alessandro Bentivoglio, and grand-niece of Lodovico il Moro, who helped him to make this discovery. Until he knew her, and for some little time after, he was regarded by the public as a brilliant young member of the order of Preachers; he was known primarily as a learned and eloquent rhetorician. But at the time that he was an inmate of the Bentivogli palace at Milan it became clear to him that his true *rôle* was that of a *raconteur* rather than that of a preacher, that it was to be his part to amuse rather than to teach his generation; although, like some novelists of our own day, he seems to have thought, sometimes, that an artist might take upon himself the office of a moral or religious teacher without injury to his art.

Ippolita Bentivoglio

Ippolita Bentivoglio was a remarkable woman in an age that produced many remarkable women. We can under-

INTRODUCTION

stand something of her charm as we look upon her grave, sweet face, painted by Luini on the eastern wall of the church of the Monastero Maggiore in her native city. Possessed herself of high intellectual qualities, she devoted some of her great wealth to the patronage of artists and men of letters. She became strongly attached to Bandello, and in her house he found a pleasant refuge and congenial society. There, too, he was brought into contact with persons like the Countess of Celant and the Duchess of Malfi's ill-fated husband, whose tragical histories he afterwards gave to the world. It was at the request of his patroness that he first began to write down the *novelle* that he had himself told, or had heard told, in her house.

Bandello at Mantua

His fidelity to the Sforza faction ultimately made it expedient for Bandello to quit Milan. Driven from the city by political discords, he took refuge at Mantua, where

Isabella d'Este

he enjoyed the friendship of Isabella d'Este. There, surrounded again by a *lieta brigata* of artists and poets, of lords and ladies, he often discoursed of affairs of love, and won admiration by his skill as a narrator. So far did he succeed in gaining the esteem of the great Duchess, that, when certain 'envious malignants'[1] complained to the General of his order of the too great freedom of the Dominican's walk and conversation, Isabella at once took up his defence, and despatched to his superior an extraordinary document,[2] in which she testified to the religious and modest life of her friend, and extolled his innumerable virtues. How Bandello was revered and beloved in his own

[1] *Bandello*, Novelle, Parte terza, Novella 42. See ed. cit., vol. viii. p. 76.
[2] *Luzio*, I Precettori d'Isabella d'Este, Ancona, 1887, p. 45.

INTRODUCTION

day is shown in the eulogies of him written by Leandro Alberti[1] and J. C. Scaliger; by the high value that J. J. Scaliger set upon Bandello's appreciation of his father; as well as in the allusions that are made to him by other contemporary writers. It has been left to squeamish critics of later ages to pour abuse upon the name of this genial writer to whom literature owes so much.

The sack of Milan: Bandello's manuscripts lost

In the year 1520 Bandello returned to his beloved Milan. He spent five uneventful years there; and then a great disaster befell him. In the sack of the city that followed upon the battle of Pavia, his father's house was burnt down, and the precious manuscripts of his *novelle* were lost. After some years of wandering, he became secretary to Cesare Fregoso, a *condottiere*, and a member of a noble Genoese family, whose wife, Costanza Rangona, was a connection of Bandello's old friends the Gonzagas. Fregoso, who at that time was in the service of the Venetian Republic, bore a somewhat ill name, as may be seen from the Venetian State papers;[2] but, cruel and unscrupulous as he was in his public life, he seems to have been beloved, and even respected, by many honourable men.[3] Brought up at the Court of France, amidst all his treacheries and tergiversations he remained true at heart to his adopted country, and was always loved and trusted by its sovereign, Francis I. A born conspirator, he ran many serious risks in the cause of France, and it was in her service that he ultimately met with his death.

Cesare Fregoso

Costanza Rangona

[1] *Leandro Alberti*, op. cit., fol. 137 and fol. 132.

[2] Calendar of State Papers, Venetian, 1534-1554, Nos. 413, 428, 431, 456.

[3] *Uberti Folietæ*, Clarorum Ligurum Elogia, Romæ, 1574, p. 126. *Paolo Giovio*, ed. 1572, vol. ii. p. 84; and several passages in Bandello's novels and J. C. Scaliger's poems.

INTRODUCTION

Bandello at Garda and Verona

Bandello troubled himself but little with the political affairs which occupied his patron. He had 'found himself,' and he wished only to be allowed to live his own life. Through the generosity of Fregoso, he was now able to live 'a se e alle Muse.' He held converse with his friends on the shore of that beautiful lake of which Virgil and Catullus sang, and which was described in Bandello's own day by that master of Italian prose, Jacopo Bonfadio. At the same time, Platonist as he was, he took a singular delight in the more material pleasures which Fregoso provided so liberally for his friends. In the prefaces to some of his novels he speaks enthusiastically of the 'Lucullian banquets' that the *condottiere* was accustomed to give at Garda, in a castle of his which had once belonged to the Scaligers.

The war in Piedmont

But at length Bandello's quiet was again disturbed. Fregoso, who had all along been in secret communication with the French Court, suddenly deserted his Venetian employers, and again publicly entered the service of France. He accepted a command in Piedmont, and, so Morosini tells us, took with him some of his Veronese friends, much to the wrath of the Republic. For nigh on two years Bandello lived in a manner which left him little leisure for his favourite pursuits. Throughout two campaigns—the story of which was told by his own friend Ferron,[1] and, with fuller detail, by Guillaume and Martin du Bellay[2]—he accompanied his patron, bewailing amongst the hills and valleys of Pied-

[1] *Arnoldi Ferroni, Burdigalensis*, De rebus gestis Gallorum, Lutetiæ, 1555, lib. viii.

[2] *Du Bellay*, Les mémoires de Mess. Martin du Bellay et de Mess. Guillaume du Bellay, Paris, 1569. See books vii. and viii.

mont the loss of his accustomed ease. At last a respite came from wandering. On the conclusion of the Truce of Nice, Bandello went with Fregoso to Castelgiuffredo, the seat of Luigi Gonzaga, where were Costanza Fregoso and her sister Ginevra, as well as a beautiful young girl, an orphan, named Lucrezia, whom Bandello had known as a 'bambolina' in the house of her father.

Castelgiuffredo

Lucrezia Gonzaga

There again the novelist lived 'to himself and the Muses.' He resumed once more the composition of his tales, and wrote several sonnets and *canzoni*. He also acted as tutor to 'la divinissima Lucrezia,' reading with her the poetry of Greece and of Rome. His young pupil was beautiful, intelligent, and sympathetic; and Bandello, old as he was, became very much in love with her. She stood only second in his affections to his dead Violante, whom, he declared, she strongly resembled.

This pleasant sojourn at Castelgiuffredo came to an end all too soon. In July 1540[1] Costanza Fregoso went to Castiglione for change of air. Her husband, who was in ill-health, followed her there immediately; and whilst they were away, the lady of the castle, Costanza's sister Ginevra, died suddenly. A few days later Lucrezia Gonzaga and her sister returned to the family seat at Gazuolo, leaving Bandello 'pieno d'amarissima doglia.' Thus was this happy company sadly broken up.

But all these changes were but preludes to a greater mutation, a tragedy which altered the whole subsequent course of Bandello's life. In June 1541, Cesare Fregoso,

[1] *Ronchini*, Lettere d'uomini illustri conservate in Parma nel R. Archivio di Stato, Parma, 1853, vol. i. pp. 67-89.

INTRODUCTION

Fregoso's assassination

when on his way to Venice as an ambassador from the French Court, was assassinated near Pavia by certain soldiers from that place, at the instigation of the Marquis of Vasto, the Imperial Governor of Milan.[1] On hearing the terrible news, the widowed Costanza herself went to Venice. But she was soon compelled to fly that city; as the authorities of the Republic discovered that her husband had again played them false, and had been one of the prime movers in a plot by means of which the most intimate secrets of the Ten were revealed to French statesmen. Thereupon Costanza made her way to France, accompanied by her faithful secretary Bandello, and threw herself on the compassion of the King. In recognition of Fregoso's services, Francis made her the best reparation in his power. Through his liberality she was enabled to live in almost royal state at the castle of Bazens near Agen, in the midst of a district which, so Reclus tells us, is the most fertile in all France. In that pleasant retreat above the valley of the Masse she was visited by Margaret of Navarre and other great personages connected with the Court. Her house was always open to poets, artists, and scholars, and she entertained lavishly the aristocracy of the province. There the happy novelist spent much of his time in his library, cheered, as were Catullus and Verlaine, by the constant companionship of another 'blithe poet,' a sweet-songed bird[2] whom he dearly loved. He directed, too, the education of the sons of his patroness, and for a time held the cure of Cabalsaut, a village near to Bazens.

Costanza flies to France

The *château* of Bazens

Bandello's bird

The *curé* of Cabalsaut

[1] *Du Bellay*, ed. cit., book ix. pp. 274, 275.

[2] *Julii Cæsaris Scaligeri*, Poemata omnia, ed. 1621; Farrago, p. 162.

Agen

Raymond, Archbishop of Toledo

J. C. Scaliger

It was not the first time that Agen had played an important part in the history of those connected movements of which that called the Renaissance was merely the culminating one. For from Agen had gone forth that monk Raymond,[1] afterwards Archbishop of Toledo, who was, in the twelfth century, one of the chief promoters of the study of the scientific works of Aristotle, and to whom Joannes Avendeath dedicated his translation of the 'Logic' of Avicenna. To Agen, four centuries later, came J. C. Scaliger, who first sought to re-establish the authority of Aristotle in the world of letters. He had already been living there for some years when Costanza Fregoso first took up her residence at the old episcopal palace near that city. Having met Bandello at Mantua, he became a regular visitor to Bazens; and, notwithstanding his inordinate vanity, this genial, learned *farceur* seems soon to have won the affection of the lady of the *château*. Indeed, Scaliger, although a sexagenarian, professed himself to have fallen a victim to Costanza's beauty, and he sang the charms of his mature mistress in many a stilted verse. To her he dedicated his 'Thaumantia,' his 'Lacrymæ,' his 'Nova Epigrammata,' and other of his works. Although Scaliger held in contempt all 'porci clerici,' he became strongly attached to Bandello. He not only wrote poetical panegyrics of the novelist: he also composed verses in honour of the ladies whom his Platonist friend had honoured with his love. In fact, during their years of companionship at Agen, the two

[1] *Francisco de Pisa*, Historia de Toledo, Toledo, 1617, Primera Parte, lib. iv. cap. 3, p. 166. *Charles Jourdain*, Recherches sur les Traductions d'Aristote, Paris, 1843, p. 108.

INTRODUCTION

Two aged amorists

old men seem to have passed a considerable portion of their time in scribbling love-poems, the one in Latin, the other in Italian; for at that time Bandello was busy preparing for the press his 'Canti' in praise of the divine Lucrezia, which were published at Agen in 1545.

Bandello Bishop of Agen

Five years later Bandello was raised to the episcopate. He accepted the see of Agen with the intention of holding it only until his pupil Ettore Fregoso was ready to take it, and most of his duties were performed by Jean Valier, bishop of Grasse. There is evidence, however, in the local archives[1] to show that Bandello really exercised his office, although for the most part he continued to live to himself and the Muses. Some time before he was made a bishop,

The recovery of the lost manuscripts

Bandello had been gladdened by the almost miraculous recovery of the manuscripts which had been lost in the sack of Milan. Thus encouraged, he resumed the preparation of

Bandello's novels published

his novels for the press, and in 1554 the first three volumes of his collection were published by Busdrago of Lucca. The fourth and last volume did not see the light until twenty years later, long after the death of its author.

Of the closing years of Bandello's life but little is known.

The death of Bandello

He died about 1562, having resigned his see some years before in favour of Giano, the eldest son of his patron; and he was buried in the church of the Jacobins at Agen, at the foot of the high altar. The last words that he

'Vivete lieti!'

addressed to the public were, 'Live merry!' 'Vivete lieti!' In those words he summed up a great part of his philosophy.

[1] It is as curious that none of Bandello's many biographers have taken the trouble to consult the archives of the *département* of Lot-et-Garonne, as that, with one single exception, they have all been content to copy down, without further inquiry, the marvellous blunders of Mazzuchelli.

It was a fitting farewell speech from the lips of one who had done so much to amuse his age.

III

Much that is irrelevant and futile has been written in regard to the licentiousness of Bandello's tales and the profligacy of the generation for whom they were composed. It is well-nigh impossible for us to arrive at anything like a just and adequate judgment upon the moral state and acts of the men of a race and an age unlike our own. If it be ever desirable to attempt to do so, such a task should only be entered upon by one who has undergone a special training, and who has a certain rare habit of mind. Unfortunately the vast majority of modern pronouncements on subjects of this kind have been as worthless as they have been impertinent; for they have been the utterances of men who, whilst possessing in some cases high literary gifts, have lacked the most necessary qualification for their self-conferred office. These so-confident judges have failed to realise that 'nothing man has projected from himself is 'really intelligible except at its own date, and from its 'proper point of view in the never-resting "secular process."' They have shown themselves to be lacking in that 'historic 'sense, which, by an imaginative act, throws itself back 'into a world unlike one's own,' and estimates everything belonging to it 'in its connection with the age from which it proceeded.'

Bandello's defence

Although Bandello's own defence of his stories is quite clear, and up to a certain point reasonable enough, his contentions have been seriously misunderstood and misrepre-

INTRODUCTION

sented. He had endeavoured, so he tells us, to write true histories of events which had actually occurred, many of them within his own time. He had sought to make a permanent addition to the materials of that science of human action of which every wise man is a student. He had described, he admits, 'unhonest and vicious deeds'; but, like Milton, he believed that 'the knowledge and survey 'of vice is, in this world, necessary to the constituting of 'human virtue.' Nay, more: although he had not, in most cases, composed his stories with any directly didactic purpose, but merely to amuse, yet in relating them he had, he contended, taken care to condemn vice and to uphold goodness to admiration; he had always clearly pointed out the punishments that ultimately overtake the wicked, as well as the happiness and glory that are the sure reward of right conduct.

The art of Bandello

Whether Bandello succeeded in exercising a salutary moral influence upon the readers of his stories is, of course, an open question; but there can be no doubt of his success in realising his literary aims. He gave to the world vivid pictures of social life, as it was at the very centre of intellectual and artistic progress in one of the most important epochs of human history.

Bandello and Defoe

In some not unimportant points he strongly resembles our first great English novelist. Like Defoe, after having been trained to fulfil the office of a preacher, he devoted some of his best energies to the composition of profane stories. Like Defoe, too, he occasionally showed, in his novels, a regrettable tendency to revert to his original vocation. Like Defoe, 'he was never gravelled for lack of matter, and had no nice ideas about manner.' Both

novelists had 'a natural infirmity of homely, plain writing.' Both, too, in spite of many faults of style, had, in an extraordinary measure, the power of imparting verisimilitude to a story. Such popularity as Bandello won for himself in his own country was almost entirely due to the possession of this quality. Living amongst a people who have always been so keenly alive to the importance of manner, he ever showed too little regard for it. His sentences were often awkward. His vocabulary was unchastened. His whole mode of expression lacked grace and distinction. And yet he never fails to make the events he is describing appear real to the reader. His style had, as D'Ancona says, 'la grande efficacia representativa.'

Bandello's skill as a narrator

His success was largely due to his adherence to a line of conduct which many distinguished critics in his own day thought to be unjustifiable. He persisted in telling his stories in his own rough northern speech.[1] 'I am not a 'Tuscan,' he says, 'but a Lombard, a descendant of the 'Ostrogoths. Were the Tuscan language natural to me, 'I would gladly use it, for I know it to be chaste and 'beautiful, but I cannot now attempt to use a language 'not my own.' With his friend Castiglione[2] he believed that a man who has anything to say will express it best in his own native tongue; and that out of it he will gather his own vocabulary, adding here and there strong and graceful words of foreign origin. Like him, too, he held that a language, if it is living, is perpetually changing,

Bandello and the purists

[1] *Bandello*, Novelle, Parte prima, Dedica ad Ippolita Sforza Bentivoglio; ed. cit., vol. i. pp. 4, 5. Also Parte terza, Il Bandello ai lettori; ed. cit., vol. vii. p. 9.

[2] *Castiglione*, Il Cortegiano, Lettera dedicatoria, ii.

INTRODUCTION

and that it is folly in a writer to heed too much the censures of purists and pedants. So to the last he continued to express himself in the Lombard idiom, and did not scruple to use the racy colloquialisms of the ordinary conversational speech of the day whenever it suited his purpose.

## IV

François de Belleforest

A *protégé* of Queen Margaret

Amongst the literary *coterie* that Costanza Fregoso gathered round her at the castle of Bazens was to be found, no doubt, a young poet of the province, named François de Belleforest, a *protégé* of her friend the Queen of Navarre. He was the son of a soldier of fortune, a man of noble family, who had died young, leaving his wife in straitened circumstances. She sought to give her boy a good education, and was much helped in her efforts by Queen Margaret. At the age of seven or eight years François left home, and was nurtured in the royal palace. 'The tenth Muse' inspired him with that love of *novelle* which clung to him throughout his life. To her influence, too, may be traced the intolerable prolixity of his style and his tiresome habit of moralising. His patroness destined the boy for the law; and he was sent, whilst still very young, to the famous college at Bordeaux, where he had for his teachers Muret and George Buchanan, and for one of his fellow-students a certain indolent youth who bore the name of Michel Eyquem de Montaigne. Like the young Montaigne, he subsequently became a student at the great legal school of Toulouse. Whilst there he grew weary of the dryness of his legal studies, and, renouncing the idea of becoming a lawyer, he determined to devote

Belleforest and Montaigne

himself to the profession of poetry. He was not without certain valuable literary qualities, and, had he taken pains to improve himself in his art, he might have attained to a respectable position as a maker of verses. But he was a vain, self-satisfied youth, gifted with a fatal fluency of expression, who spent his time in ladies' boudoirs, and was ready to believe all that his feminine admirers were pleased to say about his otiose productions. And so it happened that such natural gifts as he had remained undeveloped. He was, in fact, one of those unhappy beings who are without any power of self-criticism, and to whom the severer discipline of the world's great school comes too late to be of any service.

Belleforest deserts the law for poetry

After quitting Toulouse, he wandered about from *château* to *château* in his native province, living, as his friend Du Verdier tells us,[1] 'parmi les délices de la noblesse, à courtiser 'et faire des vers Françoises pour plaire aux dames et 'demoiselles.' It was during this period of his life that he resided at Agen, and acted as tutor in the household of a certain M. de Nort, a staunch Catholic himself, but at the head of a family which gave more than one champion to the Protestant cause. In the *Histoires Tragiques* he has left us a description of the city as it appeared to him at that time.[2] 'It was,' he says, 'a veritable *coupe-gorge*, full of 'thievish financiers, voluptuous priests, and lewd young 'students of the law, who robbed women of their honour

Belleforest at Agen

[1] *Antoine du Verdier*, Bibliothèque des Auteurs François; ed. de *Rigoley de Juvigny*, Paris, 1772-73; tom. iii. p. 608.

[2] *Belleforest*, Histoires Tragiques, Rouen edition, 1604; tom. vi. pp. 204-6.

INTRODUCTION

'and the poor of the fruits of their labour, passing their 'time in chambering and wantonness.'

Belleforest goes to Paris

Tired at last of his wandering life, which brought him but little wealth, Belleforest determined if possible to win fame and fortune in the capital. When he reached Paris

The Pleiad

the constellation of the Pleiad was in the ascendant. The young Commingeois became a part of that nebula of minor stars that clustered round the seven greater lights of that galaxy of poets. He was admitted to the friendship of Baïf and Dorat, as well as of Ronsard himself. Unfortunately, genius, if it be a disease, is not a zymotic one, and Belleforest could not succeed in imparting to his verses that subtle charm that characterised the work of his friends. He was, in fact, one of the poetasters of Ronsard's school described by Mr. Pater, in whom 'the grace of the master 'lapsed into affectation, his learning into pedantry, his 'exotic fineness into a trick.'

Like Ronsard, he was a zealous champion of Mary Queen of Scots; and when, owing to a change of paymasters, George Buchanan from being her sycophant became her slanderer,[1] Belleforest defended the queen against 'les calomnies faulces et impositions iniques' of his old tutor and hers.

The *Histoires Tragiques*

Belleforest's early prose writings met with a better reception than his verse had done. The *Histoires Tragiques* passed, as has been said, through several editions, and was eagerly read throughout France. In the preparation of the

[1] *Belleforest*, 'L'innocence de la très illustre, très chaste, et débonnaire 'Princesse, Madame Marie, Royne d'Ecosse,' Lyons, 1572; a reply to George Buchanan's 'Detection,' published under the initials F. B.

first volume, Belleforest had as collaborator the historian Pierre Boistuau de Launay; but out of the one hundred and twenty-five novels of the complete collection, all but six were translated or written by Belleforest himself. His history of the nine kings of France who had borne the name of Charles—the least inaccurate, and the most readable, too, of all his works—gained for him the post of historiographer of France.

Historiographer of France

But though, for a time, fortune flattered him with delusive hopes, the success that he sought never came to him. His entire lack of the qualifications required to fill properly the office he held became patent to every one, and he was soon deposed from it. The later volumes, too, of the *Histoires Tragiques* did not have quite the same success as the earlier ones. Belleforest gradually sank lower and lower, until at last the petted darling of the ladies of Guienne, the friend of princes and nobles, became a mere publisher's hack, slaving away with pathetic perseverance to get bread for his household. Of such literary qualities as he had once possessed, the only one that survived was his extraordinary fecundity. He had, said one of his contemporaries, 'les moules à faire les livres.' He tried his hand at all kinds of literary work; and, in the course of a few years, he produced no less than eighty volumes, all equally devoid of distinction. He engaged in tuition to eke out his scanty literary earnings, and also made persistent efforts to secure the help and patronage of the wealthy and the great. With this end in view, he wrote fulsome eulogies of several persons holding high positions in the state. But the king and his courtiers turned a deaf ear to the appeals of the poor

Belleforest's fall

INTRODUCTION

Commingeois poet. Charles may, as Mr. Pater believed, have been sincere in his reverence for literature; but, except in the case of Ronsard, he was never liberal in his treatment of literary men.[1] 'Les poètes,' he said, 'resembloient, en 'certaines choses, aux genets et autres généreux chevaux 'qu'il fault nourrir sans engrosser, à fin qu'ils ne deviennent 'porcs.' Belleforest's position became more and more hopeless as he advanced in years. At length he was so hard driven by poverty, that he stole the fruits of another man's labour to sell it for bread: he was guilty of the most flagrant plagiarism. By nature an honourable gentleman, this offence weighed upon his conscience, and on his death-bed he sent for André Thevet, the man whom he had injured, and, in the presence of witnesses, he earnestly begged his forgiveness.

To the end of his life he remained loyal to his affection for *novelle*. Excepting his verse, it was the only literary work that he did *con amore*. His seven volumes of *Histoires Tragiques* contained some novels entirely by his own hand; and in those that were professedly translations he by no means literally adhered to the original. These tales of his were no mere hack-work. He had his own views as to how a story ought to be told, and he sought with much effort to realise his artistic ideal. Unfortunately that ideal was an utterly false one, and he shamefully marred some of Bandello's best tales. Belleforest had a very poor opinion of the bishop's style, which was much too direct, simple, and unadorned for the courtier-poet. He

The *Histoires Tragiques*

Belleforest's style

[1] *Belleforest*, Les Chroniques et Annales de France; ed. Paris, 1600, p. 648.

therefore set to work to 'embellish' the *novelle* by inserting classical allusions, and similes taken from natural history; by introducing here and there an inane poem or a turgid speech; by besprinkling all the text with precious phrases. Moreover, being, like his first patroness, a most intolerable prig, he was fond of interrupting the narrative to deliver himself of trite little aphorisms and moral commonplaces. Thus, a brisk, amusing story he sometimes transformed into a tediously dull one by his impertinent embellishments. Nevertheless, so strong, and so universal, was the passion for *novelle*, that his *Histoires Tragiques* became widely popular, notwithstanding his faults as a narrator.

## V

Geoffrey Fenton

The early volumes of Belleforest's translations happened to fall into the hands of a young Englishman, Geoffrey Fenton, a kinsman, it is said, of the Dudleys and the Cecils, who for a time was resident in Paris. It is probable that he had come to France in the train of that lover of Italian culture, Sir Thomas Hoby, whose career as an ambassador was cut short by death in the autumn of 1566. Fenton came of an old Nottinghamshire family, of no great wealth though with powerful connections; and, like many young men of his class, he left his ancestral home to follow the career of a soldier of fortune. Of his early history but little is known. It has been asserted, and with some show of reason, that, in his youth, he visited the Court of Spain and some of the great Italian cities. At any rate, in the year 1567 we find him living in Paris, an eager student of the literatures of France and Italy. And it was whilst he was

Fenton in Paris

INTRODUCTION

residing there that he spent some of his 'voyed hours' in 'forcynge certeyne Tragicall Discourses oute of theyr French 'tearmes into our Englishe phrase.'

The *Tragicall Discourses*

There were strong practical reasons which led Fenton, at the age of twenty-eight, to devote himself to literature. Having wandered in his youth 'in the laborinth of sensualitie,' he had by that time 'founde the falte' of his own life. He had broken, at last, 'the slepe of his longe follye,' and had 'retired to amendment of lyfe.' Ambitious and hopeful in spite of present misfortune, he determined to obtain for himself a position in the world, and took for his own the confident motto, 'Mon heur viendra.' He was shrewd enough to see that any well-bred and comely young man, possessed of ability and judgment, might hope to win the smiles of the queen; and that literary success was one of the surest avenues to her favour. To literature, therefore, he determined to devote himself; and, with excellent judgment, he dedicated this his first book to one of Elizabeth's most intimate friends, a lady who had lost her beauty through her devotion to her sovereign, the mother of that Astrophel who was 'the President of all nobleness and chevalree.' Twelve years later, when the goal which he had striven to reach was then looming near, when he was, as it were, almost on the threshold of the royal chamber, and was about to be admitted to his sovereign's closest confidence, he dedicated his crowning work, his translation of Guicciardini's *Storia d'Italia*, to Elizabeth herself. In the preface to the *Tragicall Discourses*, as well as in several of the interpolations in the text of them, he tells us of the many troubles that pressed upon him in his early manhood. He bewails 'the mobilitie

The Lady Mary Sidney

The Queen

of fortune' and his own penuriousness. He complains of the fickleness of some 'light, inconstant dame' who, 'for 'the respect of present pleasure, was unmindful of her 'absent frende.' Yet more bitterly does he upbraid his own kinsmen for their heartless neglect of him. 'Frendes 'nowe a dayes,' he exclaims, 'resemble the raven or hungry 'kyte, who never flyeth but towardes the place where they 'hope to fynde some thinge to praye upon. So the frendes 'of our age be fled so far from the virtue of true frendshipp, 'that they will not onely refuse to restore hym whome God 'and nature hath bounde them to susteine, but also make 'no conscience to disclaim the name of a kinsman to the 'nearest allye they have, and that without any cause, on-'lesse you will impute it to the want of equall welthe.' His own experience, he tells us, moves him 'to make a chalenge' to some in England; and he wishes that 'his power were as indifferent to pleade' with the chief offender as he has 'juste reason to put hym in remembraunce of his fault.'

Fenton neglected by his kinsmen

For Fenton the years that followed the publication of the *Tragicall Discourses* were full of literary effort. Besides translating some theological treatises, in which he displayed the vigour of his Protestantism, he published, in 1572, a monstrously dull book, a translation from the French, entitled '*Monophylo*, a philosophical discourse and division of love,' as well as another volume, which consisted of a collection of passages taken chiefly from Guevara's works, and to which he gave the title of *Golden Epistles*. His last literary performance was that translation of Guicciardini's History of which mention has already been made.

Fenton's other works

Fenton was now no longer without powerful patrons.

INTRODUCTION

His kinsmen had ceased to treat him with coldness; and, although his twelve years of work as an author and translator had brought him but little wealth, he had won for himself many friends who were willing to use their influence on his behalf. Sir Henry Sidney and his wife, the learned Lady Hoby, Walsingham and Pelham, his brother Edward and the great Burghley—all in some way or other lent him their aid. But more than that, he had succeeded in gaining the confidence of the queen herself. And now, having used literature as a means to win royal favour and to obtain for himself a position in the world, when he had attained his object, like a successful *parvenu* he kicked down the ladder by which he had risen. He turned his back upon authorship, and devoted his undivided energies to the more profitable trade in which his friends and kinsmen had found him employment.

Fenton deserts literature for politics

Fenton appointed Secretary in Ireland

It was in the summer of 1580 that Fenton,[1] through the intervention on his behalf of Burghley and Walsingham, obtained the post of Secretary to the new Lord Deputy of Ireland, Lord Grey de Wilton. In the train of Lord Grey there was another, and more distinguished, servant of the Muses, Edmund Spenser, who, in his great work, has left us allegorical representations of some of the Englishmen who held office in Ireland in his own day. How near to the truth are these ideal portraits of Ireland's rulers he can best estimate who knows the stories of their glorious deeds as told by some of the heroes who shared in them. Only

Spenser

[1] The details of Fenton's political life are to be found in the Calendar of State Papers, Ireland, the Carew Papers, and the Lismore Papers, second series, ed. by Rev. A. B. Grosart.

Ireland's rulers in the sixteenth century

one who has patiently read through the Irish State Papers can realise fully how unlike to the gentle knights of Spenser's allegory were these cruel, squalid place-hunters who battened on the wretched Irish; how far removed were these mercenary sycophants from the Arthegalls and Sir Guyons of the *Faërie Queene*. Their own letters and despatches reveal to the full their cruelty, their falsity, their meanness. In them we see the fiendish delight taken by such brave gentlemen as Captain Thomas Woodhouse and Sir Richard Bingham in the butchery of half-armed, starving men and helpless women and children.[1] We see honourable personages continually employed in secretly traducing rival sycophants, and in sending private accusations against their colleagues to the queen's ministers in England. Friend betrays friend; comrade spies on comrade: almost any one of the rascal crew is ready to sell his soul for a piece of gold. Their lust for loot is insatiable. Each one of them is continually begging for wardships, confiscations, and sequestrated parsonages. And how wildly they rage when one of the pack, stronger or more cunning than the rest, carries off some quarry before their eyes!

The best that can be said for Fenton is, that he did not sink quite so low as some of his rivals. To him, as to the rest, notwithstanding all his high-sounding phrases, the pursuit of politics was primarily a *métier*. But, hireling as he was, he was neither lacking in gratitude, nor in a certain kind of

[1] Calendar of State Papers, Ireland, 1586-8, Sept. 29, 1586, Woodhouse to Fenton; also in same vol., Byngham's discourse to Burghley, Oct. 6, 1586; and a letter of Sir William Herbert's, Oct. 20, 1588. See also the Burkes' 'complaints,' in the next volume, Nov. 20, 1589.

INTRODUCTION

Elizabeth

loyalty to his employer. He was intelligent enough, too, to see that whilst an impostor might, for a time, obtain the favour of the queen by pandering to her vanity or her amorousness, such triumphs were but short-lived. Her keen intuitiveness, her thorough knowledge of human nature, and, above all, her masculine common-sense, prevented her from being long the dupe of a deceiver. He therefore set to work to establish himself in her confidence; and he was so far successful, that in the end the queen came to trust to him as the most reliable source of information in regard to Irish affairs. 'Whoever was Lord Deputy in Ireland,' says one of his biographers, 'he continued to be Elizabeth's 'counsellor there; as a man upon whom she depended, from 'whom she took her notions of the state of affairs, whose 'credit was not to be shaken by the artifices of any faction 'whatever.' His position was indeed a powerful one; but it is difficult to see how any honourable gentleman could have played the part that he did for nigh upon three decades. Throughout this time it was his practice to keep a close watch upon the actions of his colleagues and professed friends, and to send secret information of their conduct to his sovereign and her chief ministers. He was about their path continually, and spied out all their ways. Their hasty words, their slightest omissions of duty, their petty peculations, were all noted down by her Majesty's 'faithful servitor,' and were reported to her or her chief ministers. 'He was,' said his contemporaries, 'a moth in the garment,' 'a flee in the bed,' of all the lord deputies of that time. By no means a precisian in his own practice, he was, like many of his school, extremely censorious of the

Fenton wins the queen's confidence

An informer

conduct of others, and did not use with moderation and charity the extraordinary powers which he possessed. Consequently, although he was discreet and secret in his manner of communicating information to the Court, men soon began to suspect him, and he came, ultimately, to be more deeply and universally hated than any other officer of the queen in Ireland.

Hatred of Fenton

But although his enemies were ceaselessly at work, they were unable to deprive him of his unique position, and twice only did they succeed in winning even a temporary advantage over him. Fenton's first reverse occurred in 1587. In January of that year, Sir John Perrot, knowing that 'malicious tongues' were continually speaking evil of him to those in authority, in his eagerness for revenge was guilty of an act of injustice which caused Fenton some humiliation and suffering. The Lord Deputy caused his enemy to be arrested, carried through the streets of Dublin on a market-day, and thrust into the common gaol. The queen took up the case of her servant, ordered her hot-headed brother to release Fenton immediately, and bade him forbear that hard kind of proceeding in like case thereafter. From that time until the end of the reign, Fenton's power remained unimpaired. The queen herself wrote to him some years later, saying that it was in him that she reposed her trust 'to receave her privatest dispatches.'

Fenton's first period of humiliation

But after her death his enemies had an opportunity which they did not fail to take advantage of. Full of insular prejudices, hating and despising both French and Spaniards, Italians and Irish, Fenton, in his official communications, had been especially bitter in his abuse of the Scots. 'They

Fenton's second period of humiliation

INTRODUCTION

'are,' he declared, 'a needy and beggarly race, and full of 'treachery.' He was averse to introducing them into Ulster to supplant the rebel Irish. 'Dogs,' said he, 'will not eat dogs' flesh.' Towards the close of the queen's reign, he wrote more than once to Cecil denouncing James himself as a treacherous ally, alleging that he secretly endeavoured to keep Ireland in sedition, that he was in league both with the rebels and with Spain, and that all 'his fair semblances to her Majesty' were but 'Scottish dissimulation.' It was therefore only natural that when James came to the throne the Secretary was fearful that he might lose his position. Of his colleagues in Ireland, as many as could get away hurried across the Channel, laden with all the money they could scrape together, and full of slanderous tales of each other, to bribe and lie their way into royal favour. Those who, perforce, had to remain behind paid some friend or patron to look after their interests at Court. From the highest to the lowest, as Fenton himself admitted, they 'were 'diligent to send out to seek the star risen in the North, and 'to carry myrrh and frankincense to it; every one seeking a 'St. Peter to lead him to Christ.' Fenton professed to Cecil that he 'reposed only on him to give him way to his Majesty's good opinion and favour'; but at the same time he sent over his servant to buy the support of other powerful courtiers. His emissary managed the matter badly. According to Fenton, he sought aid from the wrong persons, and 'followed the vanity of his own mind,' instead of adhering closely to his instructions. In short, his mission was entirely unsuccessful.

Cecil, moreover, seems to have taken umbrage at the

Irish Secretary's double-dealing. At any rate, he thought that it would be unwise to show too great favour to one who had said so many bitter things about the Scots king; and consequently he did not exert himself on his friend's behalf when Fenton's enemies, seeing their opportunity, endeavoured to get him deposed from his office.

In writing at this time to his son-in-law Robert Boyle, Fenton says that 'had he had more of worldlye meanes he might have . . . kept his position intact.' But as he had not sufficient of 'this wicked transitory trash' to bribe effectively, his traducers gained a partial victory over him. He was compelled to share his office of Secretary with Sir Richard Coke.

For some time the old man continued to address piteous appeals to Cecil to help him to regain his former position. He reminded him of his long years of faithful service. In order to disprove the charges of peculation and bribe-taking that were persistently directed against him, he sent the Minister 'a true collection of all his worldly estates in England and Ireland.' He said that he had 'always honoured and followed Cecil with an upright heart,' and besought him not to allow him 'to be so unworthily over-'thrown, through the malice of his enemies, in his aged 'years.' He told him that he was ready again to play his old part, and to keep Cecil and the king privately informed as to the true state of affairs in Ireland.

Fenton restored to his post

For a long time his petitions were unanswered; but in the end he received the reward of his importunity. In 1604 his office was regranted to him for life; and a few years later we find Salisbury writing to his 'verie loving friend'

INTRODUCTION

in the old intimate strain, and telling him that whatever 'information he should at any time imparte, touching his 'Majesty's service, should be used in the way he desired.'

To the last, Fenton adhered to the principles he gave expression to in the *Tragicall Discourses*. To the last he advocated repressive measures against the 'dyabolicall secte of Rome.' In his despatches from Ireland he laments the want of a rack in England, and advocates the torturing of Irish prisoners. Like all fanatics, he believed at heart that the end justifies the means, and we find him urging Cecil to employ 'underhand means' for removing troublesome chief-

Fenton's brief period of moderation

tains, such as Florence MacCarthy Mor. Nevertheless, there was a time when even Fenton was dimly conscious of the folly and wickedness of the English rule. We find him telling Cecil, in 1596, that the sores of Ireland are too far gone to be cured with sharp medicines. We find him condemning 'the unworthy looseness of the soldiery,' and touched by 'the pitiful cry of the starving people.' He recognises that without 'framing the Irish first to love her Majesty' and her government, it was 'vain to expect that

Force no remedy

they would preserve in duty and affection.' 'Force,' he declares, 'is no remedy. It hath done no good these three years.' He recommends some milder way of pacification. For the time he stands out in shining contrast to blood-thirsty ministers of the gospel, such as Loftus, Daniel, and Lyon, who were continually imploring the government to draw the sword on this rebellious and stiff-necked people who would not, in spite of fines and imprisonments, come to Protestant conventicles to hear the Word of God preached. But the improvement was only momentary.

Fenton hardens his heart again

After the failure of the negotiations with Tyrone in 1597 and 1598, Fenton hardened his heart again. He was disgusted at the 'arrogance' of the Irish leader in daring to ask that the people might have 'liberty of conscience.' He despaired of winning over such obstinate heretics and rebels by merciful measures. 'Her Majesty must depend no more upon treaties and parleys, but turn her mercy to revenge.'

The plot to assassinate Tyrone

To attempt to utterly extirpate the plague of treason by main force would be too great and costly an undertaking. Some newer and sharper means of striking a blow at sedition must be adopted. Fenton is convinced that the serpent must be killed in the head, then 'the poison will have no further force in the limbs.' In short, he recommends that Tyrone shall be assassinated and his sons kidnapped.

He persuaded Cecil to agree to his proposals; and straightway he cast about 'to find an axe to strike down, 'at one blow, the great oak that had grown up in many 'years.' That is to say, he sought to discover a fit occasion and suitable agents for carrying out the dastardly plot he had concocted. Tyrone's extreme popularity was a serious obstacle to its development, and the death of Cecil's father caused it to be set on one side for a time; but, in spite of many discouragements, the Secretary did not cease to urge it upon his master, until the course of events finally extinguished all hopes of its success.

Fenton and the settlement of Ulster

Fenton never again reverted to that more moderate and reasonable attitude, which once, for a brief space, he had assumed. In the closing years of his life we find him strenuously opposing Sir Arthur Chichester's earlier and more humane scheme for the settlement of Ulster. He was

INTRODUCTION

disgusted with the toleration and lenity of the new Lord Deputy; and he strongly objected to the granting of pardons to offenders, for by this means 'the king's well-deserving servitors were robbed of their recompense.' It was largely through his influence that Chichester's first proposals were set on one side, and that Ulster was treated as a conquered country, to be divided amongst the new settlers and the native Irish as seemed fit to her Majesty's representatives.

Sermons

Nevertheless, although an advocate of severe measures, Fenton did not believe in altogether neglecting to attempt to influence the people by moral suasion. He always clung to his belief in the efficacy of sermons; and though he did not, as in his younger days, usurp himself the office of the preacher, he frequently counselled Cecil to send 'learned and discreet ministers' to Ireland, in the conviction that a strong regimen of Protestant harangues, tempered by a judicious use of the sword, the thumbscrew, and the rack, would prove an efficacious treatment for the maladies of that unhappy country.

Fenton's last days

To the end of his days, too, he showed himself to be the same strenuous, narrow-minded servant of the crown. The pathetic letters[1] that he addressed in his old age to Richard Boyle reveal to us his diligence, his earnestness, as well as the strength of his domestic affections. Only a year before his death we find him telling his son-in-law that 'he cannot write to him at length,' as he is now 'so full to provide for the daungers that the tyme doth threaten,' and asking Boyle to commend him to 'good Kate,' and to his little

1609

grandson, his 'jewell Hodge.' And so, whilst still 'overprest

[1] Lismore Papers, second series, ed. by Rev. A. B. Grosart.

with business,' death overtook him, at Dublin, on October 19, 1609.

He played out to the end his *rôle* of Irish informer-in-chief; and his colleagues' thirst for vengeance did not cease even with his death. Before his body was cold they were seeking to obtain permission to search his papers.

The story of his life is not without its moral. It shows us to what depths of infamy a man may sink, who, lured on by a love of gain, deserts the calm pursuit of letters for the sordid game of politics.

## V

Fenton's dual temperament

'A soldier and a long robe,' a courtier and a statesman, a theologian and a man of letters, Fenton displayed to the full that vigorous versatility which was so marked a characteristic of the men of our English Renaissance. His frequent interpolations in the text of the *Tragicall Discourses* throw considerable light on his personality, and reveal to us that in Fenton, as in other of his contemporaries, there was that extreme duality of temperament—of which Robert Greene afforded perhaps the most curious example—which made it possible for him to be strongly attracted at the same moment by two movements which had very little in common, and which, in their later aspects, were mutually opposed to each other.

The Renaissance and the Puritan movement

These significant additions in Fenton's first book reveal to us on the one hand a young man imbued with the spirit of the Renaissance, its restless curiosity, its admiration for 'virtue,' its conviction of the power and importance of the individual: they show him to be an enthusiastic student of

INTRODUCTION

the philosophy and literature of the old pagan world, as well as eager to learn all that he could about nature and about the men of his own day. On the other hand, we find him strongly influenced by nascent Puritanism, and already full of narrow prejudices. In the end it was the Puritan in him that triumphed. But although, when still in early middle life, he forsook humane pursuits, although as a politician he won for himself that pecuniary reward which the service of literature did not bring him, it is as a literary man that he is most widely and most honourably known. His first book, his *Tragicall Discourses*, has secured for him a niche in the temple of fame. The great historian of English poetry declared that of all those collections of Italian love-stories which exercised so profound an influence on the England of Elizabeth, this miscellany of his was the best in point of size and selection; and that opinion has been indorsed by many discerning critics since Warton's day.

The *Tragicall Discourses* his most notable work

Fenton's aim

Fenton's professed object in writing these Tragicall Discourses was twofold. He wished to give recreation to, as well as provide instruction for, 'the fraile ympes of his own age.'

The value of histories

He was firmly convinced, too, of the value of histories as a means of imparting moral and religious instruction to the young. 'The most parte of the simple and ignorant sorte,' he urges, 'are rather moved with such examples, then 'reduced with the severe sentences of somme great philo-'sopher or reformed theologyan.' He admits that, 'at the first syghte,' these Discourses of his 'may importe certeyne vanytyes or fonde practises in love.' Nevertheless, he does not doubt but that 'he will be absolved of any vain intent' by the fair-minded, 'seinge that he has rather noted diver-

'sitie of examples, in sondrye younge men and women, INTRO-
'approvynge sufficiently the inconvenience happenynge by DUCTION
'the pursute of lycenceous desyer, than affected in any
'sorte such uncerteyne follies.' He does not approve of 'a Milton's
'fugitive and cloistered virtue, unexercised and unbreathed, *Areopagitica*
'that never sallies out and sees her adversary.' Like Bandello, he believes, with the great Puritan poet, that men should know 'the utmost that vice promises to her fol-
'lowers'; and that 'the knowledge and survey of vice is,
'in this world, necessary to the constituting of human
'virtue.' He does not, therefore, at all agree with those who would have the young 'read only of the noble actes of good men.' They must also have set before them 'the evill doings of the wicked,' and learn to trace accurately the consequences that flow from them. If such knowledge were not of value, he urges, it is inconceivable that, 'for so many
'hundreth years, in all common states, as well heathen as
'christened, would have been permitted the reading of sondrye
'Poetes, whose commodies and tragedies importe a description
'figuratyve of the wicked lives of all degrees of men and
'women; wythout intente to perswade any ymitation that
'waye, but rather to provoke the multitude, by familyar
'traines, to avoyde such condicions as they sawe justely re-
'prehended in others.' 'Doth not Scripture itself,' says he, The Bible
'note us unto the lyves of sundre vicious parsons'; to the end that, 'in vewynge the strange and grevous punishment which
'ordinarily hath overwhelmed such sin,' we may 'learne
'and labor to directe our lives by the contrary of their
'examples'? Thus does Fenton anticipate the arguments of the *Areopagitica*. With Milton he holds that without

INTRODUCTION

the knowledge of evil there can be 'no wisdom to choose, no continuance to forbear.' With Milton he maintains that 'he that can apprehend and consider vice, with all her baits 'and seeming pleasures, and yet abstain, and yet distinguish, 'and yet prefer that which is truly better, he is the true 'wayfaring Christian.'

In spite of his high professions, and the cogency of his reasoning, Fenton's book did not escape censure at the hands of the more scrupulous sort. Not many months after the publication of the *Tragicall Discourses*, Roger Ascham, in his *Scholemaster*, made a violent attack upon those 'Italionated' Englishmen that brought to their native country 'the inchantements of Circes.' He was particularly violent in his censure of those who had translated, and published at home, the *novelle* of Italy. 'Of these ungratious 'bookes,' he says, 'many have been set in printe within 'these fewe moneths,' and 'are now sold in every shop in 'London.'[1] They are 'commended,' he adds, 'by honest 'titles the soner to corrupt honest maners'; and 'dedicated 'over boldlie to vertuous and honourable personages, the 'easelier to begile simple and innocent wittes.' But, in spite of their fair semblances, they 'allure yong willes and wittes to wantonnes,' and 'teach old bawdes new schole poyntes.'

Ascham's attack

[1] *Ascham*, 'The Scholemaster,' London, 1570, book I. *See* Arber's 'Reprint,' London, 1870, pp. 78, 79, *et seq.* Jusserand ('The English Novel,' etc., pp. 74-76), strangely enough, includes the 'Cortegiano' amongst the Italian books at which Ascham's strictures were aimed; when, as a matter of fact, the author of 'The Scholemaster' held Castiglione's book in the highest esteem. This 'booke,' he said, 'advisedlie read, and diligentlie folowed but one yeare at home in England, would do a yong gentleman more good, I wisse, then three yeares travell abrode spent in Italie.'

Ascham was convinced, moreover, that the translation and circulation of such literature in England was part of a Romish plot 'to corrupt honest living and subvert true religion.' 'When the busie and open Papistes abroad,' he says, 'could not, by their contentious bookes, turne men in 'England fast enough, from troth and right judgement in 'doctrine, than the sutle and secret Papistes at home, pro-'cured bawdie bookes to be translated out of the Italian 'tonge, whereby over many yong willes do now boldly 'contemne all severe bookes that sounde to honestie and 'godlines.'

A Papist plot

That it was against Fenton that Ascham's attack was mainly directed there can be but little doubt. It was Fenton who, Puritan and theology-monger though he was, had ventured to suggest that the young and ignorant were not likely to be easily moved by 'the severe sentences of a reformed theologian.' He had dared, too, to dedicate his 'fond book' to a virtuous and honourable personage, for whom Ascham himself had a high regard. It was Fenton's book that was then being 'sold in every shop in London.' Beside the *Tragicall Discourses* but one other collection of Italian stories that we know of had been published in England—the first volume of Painter's *Palace of Pleasure*.

Fenton the chief object of Ascham's attack

That a man of sense and intelligence, as Ascham undoubtedly was, should have conceived such suspicions of so staunch a young Protestant as Fenton, only shows what strange hallucinations a mind ordinarily well-balanced may become the prey to when it is infected by the *odium theologicum*. Just as in a later day many excellent people,

INTRODUCTION

of quite average shrewdness, were wont to regard any movement, political, social, or religious, which they did not understand, or which they disliked, as the work of 'Jesuits in disguise,' so Ascham was ready to trace the handiwork of 'secrete Papistes' in any book which was not to his palate. Papistrie! the very word roused him like a trumpet. The mere sound of it filled him with fury of battle, and made him forget all reason, justice, and fairness. In his blind rage mistaking friend for foe, he rained wild blows on members of his own party; and, madder than that valiant knight of La Mancha, he tilted at one of the strong positions of the army whose champion he was. It was Ascham, not Fenton, who sought to subvert Protestant principles. It was Ascham, not Fenton, who endeavoured to bring Papist practices into England. It was Fenton, not Ascham, who was the more consistent Protestant of the two.

Ascham's inconsistency

Biblical methods of teaching

'The Bible, and the Bible only,' said Chillingworth, 'is the religion of Protestants.' And in writing his book the young Fenton, as a pious Protestant, strictly adhered to Biblical methods of imparting moral instruction. 'The 'Bible itself,' as Milton said, 'ofttimes relates blasphemy 'not nicely,' and 'describes the carnal sense of wicked men 'not inelegantly.' The Book, in fact, is full of earthly stories, to which the faithful attach some heavenly meaning; and some of the tales to be found in the Hebrew scriptures are of exactly the same type as those of which Fenton's collection is composed. Therein are to be found the 'Tragicall Discourses' of Amnon and Tamar, of David and Bathsheba, of Dinah and Sheehem, of the villainy of

the men of Gibeah. Therein, too, are to be found such 'pleasant and profitable comedies' as those of Boaz and Ruth, of Joseph and Potiphar's wife, of the Shulamite and her royal lover. From all these tales the devout Protestant draws profitable moral lessons. It was Ascham and his co-religionists who held that it was right and fitting that such histories should be read by young and old alike. 'An open Bible' was one of the rallying cries of the faction to which he belonged. And Ascham, in seeking to put down Fenton's book, could not but be regarded, by any consistent Protestant, as one of those 'fools who would teach men to read more decently than 'God thought good to write.'

'An open Bible'

Moreover, in advocating the licensing of books, and in exhorting the licensers to rigour, Ascham himself was endeavouring to promote 'Papish' practices in England. For, as Milton shows us, it was the 'Papists' who were the inventors of licensing, or rather who were the first to suppress not only such books as contained heretical opinions, but also such as they conceived to be likely to conduce to immorality. Protestantism held, on the other hand, that 'to the pure all things are pure,' 'not only 'meats and drinks, but all kinds of knowledge, whether of 'good or evil.' And the Spirit of Protestantism might be represented as saying to the faithful those words which, according to Dionysius Alexandrinus, God spoke to him in a vision:—'Read any books whatever come to thy 'hands; for thou art sufficient both to judge aright and 'to examine each matter.'

Ascham an advocate of Papish practices

Protestant principles

Had Ascham examined carefully the *Tragicall Dis-*

INTRODUCTION

*courses*, he would have no doubt become convinced of the orthodoxy of its author. It is clear, however, that, like certain inquisiturient schoolmasters of our own day, he did not take the trouble to read the book which he condemned. Fenton, in fact, throughout his whole career, at first with the pen and afterwards with the sword, was an earnest and consistent champion of the Protestant cause. His strong bias is abundantly displayed in the passages which he has interpolated in the text of this his first work. 'The Bible,' he says, 'is the infallible book; and its study 'ought to bee the only exercise of those that are cladd in the 'habit of religion.' He never misses any opportunity for inserting a tirade against 'the Babylonian or dyabolicall secte of Rome,' and is perpetually abusing the Pope and the Catholic clergy. 'Abbaie men,' he says, 'carry the devil in the cowle of their hoods.' He thanks God that the realm of England is now 'happely purged of suche filthe, 'and replenished with a plentiful crewe of th' undowted 'ministers of God's Word.' But in nothing does he show more clearly his Puritan prejudices than in his frequent pronouncements on such subjects as the position of woman, the government of wives, and the education of children. Like many Englishmen who have held the same creed, he is pestilently didactic and oracular, especially when treating of topics of this class. After the fashion of the Puritan pamphleteers of the following age, he is for ever discoursing on the inconstancy of women, their wantonness, their proneness to folly. He is continually seeking to convince married men of the importance of 'keeping a tight rein upon this 'kynde of cattall,' and of seeing that their wives 'abide

Fenton an earnest and consistent Protestant

The Bible 'the infallible book,' and the only guide in matters of faith

'The dyabolicall secte of Rome'

The Puritan conception of woman's proper position

'continually in awe of them.' 'For,' says he, 'if they get 'once the bit between their teethe, and crop of the hearbe 'of ryotus will, it is harder to reclayme them, eyther by 'awe, feare, compulsion, or gentle entreatie, then the wilde 'haggard, or rammish falcon, by any connynge or devise of 'their keper.' 'Women,' he declares, 'have their being in 'this world for no other respect then to depende upon the 'will of men.' They are 'derived from the imperfection 'of men,' and 'ordained from the beginning to be their 'vassals.' Hence, in Fenton's opinion, 'the chiefest virtue 'in a woman is to be obedient to her husband, and to be 'continually under the yoke of his awe.' If any wife should fail in this respect, her lord has the remedy in his own hands. He must 'show himself worthye of the authority 'given him by God and nature in exposing the rodd of cor-'rection.' Fenton, in fact, like other of his co-religionists, is a most conscientious wife-beater, and strongly disapproves of the leniency of Italian husbands. 'He that dwelleth 'wyth his wyfe according to knowledge,' says a representative divine of that school, 'endeavoureth to beate the feare 'of God into her heade, if she be not obedient and helpful 'unto him, that thereby she may be compelled to learne 'her duty and doe it.' Fenton, like John Rogers, had a most profound belief in the efficacy of this means of correcting the waywardness of 'the sect femenyne.' He held that this severe treatment should commence whilst the 'flickering creatures' were still in their infancy. 'These ympes,' he says, 'have follye tyed on their backes. They be more 'apt to decline than any other creature. Therefore the 'tutours of lytle girles must not forgett to offer theym the

Women ordained to be men's vassals

Fenton a conscientious wife-beater

Matthew's Bible

'The secte femenyne'

'The rodd of correction'

INTRODUCTION

'racke and tormentes of the rodde; which you must minister 'unto theim in the greenes of their yeres and affore the 'tendrenes of youthe, with wante of discretion, will suffer 'theim to discerne their oune inclinacioun.' Next to the 'rodd of correction,' he regards incessant toil as the best prophylactic against the many moral maladies with which vain woman so easily becomes infected. 'Women,' he says, 'ought to kepe their bodyes accompanied with contynual 'travayle.' As a 'recreacion,' he regards 'the use of the nedle' as the most suitable for women. 'Daunsing,' and such-like 'fonde practises,' he declares to be 'disciplines devised within the scoole of Sathan.' It is true that in making this last pronouncement he is but translating the words of Belleforest: nevertheless we may regard it as representing his own views on the matter, as he never scruples to alter or omit any statement of the French writer with which he does not agree.

'The use of 'the nedle'

'Daunsing' condemned

But fond as Fenton is of usurping the office of a preacher, his interpolations in the text of the *Discourses* do not wholly, or even mainly, consist of Puritan dogmatisings. By carefully collating his translations with the same stories as told by Belleforest, we find many additions of a very different order. Inveterate moraliser though he was, he was also an artist, and had in no small measure certain great artistic qualities. His book has neither the vices nor the virtues of the average modern translation. He was not scrupulously accurate, nor did he attempt in any way to represent in English the style of the original writer; but his work has a strength and freedom which no ordinary translation possesses.

Fenton as an artist

In him 'the imaginative reason' is continually active. He does not only, like some Elizabethan translators, embroider the text with precious phrases and epithets. He does not merely add, here and there, some curious simile, some allusion to classical history or mythology. He realises each story for himself, and tells it in his own way; and in the very texture of the narrative he introduces sensuous touches which reveal to us how much more he was than a translator. In narrating, for instance, the history of Julia, that pathetic tale which Bandello had, no doubt, first heard from the gracious lips of his friend Castiglione, he tells us that, in the course of the dance, the gallant of Ferrara 'failed not to graspe the hand' of the girl 'as often as he durst.' In his description of the final scene of the tragedy, too, Fenton adds to its effectiveness by representing Julia as kissing her sister before she throws herself into the Oglio. Again, in that very tragical history of 'A younge Ladye in Millan,' the whole of the passage relating to the first secret meeting of Pandora and Parthenope is full of added incident. The lady, for example, forgets not 'to seale the bargaine' 'with sundry sortes of kysses, and other homlye trickes of familiaritie.' The knight, too, fails not 'humbly to honour' 'her bare brestes' 'wyth the often print of his mouthe.' There are several similar additions in the amusing account of the 'perills happenyng to a younge gentleman of Myllan in the pursute of his ladie.' This austere young Puritan, also, describes with more fulness of detail than either Bandello or Belleforest the legerdemains used at Pavia by that 'fair souldier of Venus,' the Countess of Celant. To each story, in fact,

INTRODUCTION

he imparts some of the fire and freshness of an original work.

Fenton's vocabulary

Fenton's vocabulary is very copious, and he boldly makes use of words gathered from all kinds of sources. We find in the *Tragicall Discourses* many words borrowed from French and Italian, as well as from Greek and Latin. Some of these, such as 'catterres,' 'calibre,' 'symptomes,' 'catalogue,' 'anotomy,' ultimately came into common use. Others, such as 'lymytrophall,' 'escarfion,' 'darioletta,' 'tyntamar,' 'denier,' 'bourreau,' 'sympathia' (in the Italian sense of the word), and 'marmotta,' were never Anglicised. The word 'collcaryour' (messenger), which he adapted from the French, and which he uses several times, is only to be found, I believe, in this book; and, so far as I can discover, he is the first English writer to employ the word 'horley borley.' It was owing no doubt to the influence of the Pleiad that he introduced into his text several Greek words, such as 'pololugos,' 'diabolos,' and 'dermopterae.'

In the *Tragicall Discourses* there are many expressive words which have now become obsolete. Amongst words of this class are 'elne,' 'jonkynge,' 'huishyng,' 'curtalls,' 'pavisinge,' 'nestcockle,' 'dyamantyn,' and 'mockhallyday.'

A euphuist before Euphues

Fenton painted from a full palette. He handled, too, his material, for the most part, with considerable force and sincerity. Nevertheless, there are passages here and there in his work in which he employs those *précieuses* mannerisms which ultimately became so popular amongst the prose writers of Elizabeth's Court. And though he was

much more moderate in his use of such affectations than was Lyly or even Gascoigne, he must be regarded as one of the founders of euphuism—a euphuist before Euphues.

Fenton and Guevara

Some modern critics have represented Antonio de Guevara as the originator of this *mode* of expression. But whilst there can be little doubt that the Spanish writer's *El Relox de Principes* played an important part in the gradual evolution of this style, there were other influences at work scarcely less potent. Euphuism, in fact, was merely one phase of a movement which had its adherents in France and in Italy as well as in Spain and in England, and the origin of which cannot be traced to any one source. Fenton, it is true, was already a student of Guevara when he wrote the *Tragicall Discourses*, and but a short time after its publication he produced his *Golden Epistles*, which consisted largely of passages translated from the Spaniard's great work; but in the formation of his style he was as much influenced by Belleforest and other prose writers of the Pleiad as by the Bishop of Guadix.

The marks of euphuism

In Fenton's book are to be found all the characteristics of euphuism—elaborate antithesis, alternate alliteration, the frequent employment of the rhetorical question, and an extravagant use of metaphors largely borrowed from natural history. Alliteration, indeed, was a very common trick amongst writers of that time—even plain, unaffected Roger Ascham makes constant use of it; but *transverse* alliteration is a distinguishing mark of euphuism, and examples of this peculiar mannerism are not uncommon in Fenton's prose. He alludes, for example, to the secte femenyne as 'that flattering crew of flickeringe creatures.'

Alternate alliteration

INTRODUCTION

Similes drawn from natural history

He asserts that Pandora was 'drowned in the filthy desire of the flesh.' Again, his use of metaphor is peculiarly euphuistic. He makes frequent allusion to 'herbs or beasts which Ind or Affrike hold.' He speaks, for instance, of the cameleon which is 'norished by the breath of the ayre.' He tells us of 'the loving rage of the she ape towards her yonge ones.' He describes, too, very prettily, the dying swan. 'The nearer,' he says, 'she draweth to the ende of 'her destiny, the pleasanter note she synges, bathinge and 'pruninge herselfe in the purest streame she can fynde, to 'th'ende to do honor to her funerall fate.' We are also introduced to the 'salamandre,' the 'basilike' or cockatrice, the scorpion, the elephant, the 'tygre' and the 'libarde.' It is true that many of the animals in this curious collection are to be found in Belleforest, but Fenton certainly makes a more frequent use of such similes than the French writer. In seeking to prove, for example, that some women are reformed rather 'by faire intreaity' than 'by feare or force of torments,' he interpolates the following passage:—'The 'fierce elephant standes not in awe of his keeper by force of 'any stripes, but is made tractable to bende his lardge bodie 'whilest he mounte upon his backe, by certeine familiar 'voices and stroakinges of his keper, wherewith he over-'cometh the naturall rudenes and crueltie of the beaste. 'The tygre will take foode at the handes of the wildman, 'norished in the caves and desert habitacions amongst 'theim, where no stripes nor other awe of man can move 'any moderacion to his wodnes or cruell nature.' On the very same page, too, he introduces an allusion 'to the 'stone of Scylicia, uppon whom the more you beate to

'bruse or breake yt in peces, the greater hardnes is driven 'into it.'

Fenton, however, frequently forgets all such mannerisms, and writes with great simplicity and directness. In the second *Discourse*, for example, that dialogue between Cornelia and Camilla, in which the former reveals to her friend the secret of Livio's solitary mode of life, is remarkable for its point and briskness. The story of Cornelio and Plaudina contains more than one excellent narrative passage.[1] Very picturesque, too, is Fenton's description of Fynea's visit to the witches. 'Discending,' he says, 'into the vale of Cam-'monika,' she 'gat, by the helpe of those sprites and lymmes 'of the devill inhabytynge that hellish ylande, certayne 'flowers gathered in the waine of the moone, wyth droagues 'and other tromperie of witchecrafte, requisite for conjurers 'and suche as occupye the pernicious trade of enchauntynge.' And how beautiful is his description of death!—'And as 'sone as we have taken possession of the house of reste, he 'shooteth the gates of all annoye againste us, fedinge us, as 'it were, with a swete slomber or pleasant sleepe, until the 'last summonce of generall resurrection.'

It was not Fenton's part, as it was of some translators in that age, only to serve as a conduit to convey to his own land some portion of those fertilising streams which, in our tardy English springtime, caused the seeds of genius to spring up and bear fruit. Nor did he merely reflect, as a mirror, some of the light and warmth of Italy. His work had, as has been said, its own specific artistic virtues. His was an interesting personality, and he had in no small

[1] Vol. i. pp. 227, 233-236.

INTRO-DUCTION

measure the power of expressing himself. It is curious, therefore, that his book has been so much overlooked of late; for it certainly deserves to be read, not merely by students of the sources of our dramatic literature, but also by all those who are interested in the evolution of English prose style; as well as by that larger class who delight to read old tales of passion, stories of 'lovynge ladyes haples haps, theyr deaths, and deadly cares.'

R. L. DOUGLAS.

## NOTE

*This Edition of the Tragicall Discourses is reprinted from the Editio Princeps of* 1567

# CERTAINE TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

WRITTEN OUTE OF FRENCHE AND LATIN

## BY GEFFRAIE FENTON

NO LESSE PROFITABLE THEN PLEASAUNT,
AND OF LIKE NECESSITYE TO AL DEGREES
THAT TAKE PLEASURE IN ANTIQUITYES
OR FORREINE REAPPORTES.

*Mon heur viendra.*

1567

TO THE RIGHTE HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADIE,

## The LADYE MARYE SYDNEY,

### Geffraye Fenton Wisheth a happie encresse of honor and yeares in this lyfe.

NICEPHORUS, an historiographer of greate creditt amongest the Grekes, affirmeth, that as everye knowledge of it selfe deserveth commendacion, so the discipline of histories is most agreable and necessarie for all ages: which the Roman orator Marcus Cicero full well approveth, in commending the studie therof to all degrees and times as an exercise of most necessitye and honor: for that, saith he, in them is represented, as yt were, an ymage or pourtraict of all thinges that have passed since the beginning of the worlde, together with diversitie of instructions to all sortes of people touchinge their direction in future chaunces, even untill the laste and extreame dissolution of the same; not doutinge also in his firste booke, *De Oratore*, to add certeine peculiar titles, callinge an historie 'testis temporis, lux veritatis, vita memoriæ, magistra vitæ, et nuncia vetus statis.' 'For if a man be younge,' sait he, 'the readynge thereof will make hym old, not in yeares, wich the most parte cold be content to shyfte of and forgo, but in experience and wisedom.' And if he bee alredye loaden wythe the heavie burden of nature, what a pleasure is it then to beholde the thinges whiche eyther he hath passed in youth, or long before his time were put in practise.

A witness or cronicler of tymes, a candle to the trothe, the life of the memorie, the maister of a man's life, and the reaporter of all antiquityes.

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY

Whereof, as the first is veraye well proved by Euripides the Poett sainge that the remembrance of the paine that is past is sweete; so the oppinion of Tullye, touchinge the other, perswades a great necessitie to all degrees to be prevye to the commoditie of stories. 'For,' saith he, 'to be ignoraunt in things happened or thou waste borne, is as much to say as thou wilte be alwaies a child.'

'Iucundi acti labores.'

'Nescire quid antequam natus sis acciderit est semper esse puerum.'

There is required in all estates both a faithe and a feare in God, and also an outwarde pollecie in wordly thinges: wherof, according to the philosophers, the one is to bee learned by perusinge the Scripture, and the other can not bee gotten but by the assistance of histories, who are the onelye and true tables whereon are drawne in perfect coollers the vertues and vices of everye condicion of man, bothe their florishynge tyme, whileste they embraced the first, and miserable fal when they grew in delite with the wickedness of the last. Yf a man be a magistrate, or beare authoritie in publike affaires, what labor is better bestowed then in searchinge the actes of suche as have supplied equall dignitye and place, to accomodate himselfe to their vertues? And, to the privat person, antiquitie gives choice of admonicions for obedience to his superiors, with charge to applie and employe all his care for the commoditye of his countreye. Yf he bee a citizen, he shall there fynde what belongeth to his proper office, eyther in the service of his publike weal or in his peculiar affaires at hoame. And to a woman, what stoare of examples are there to instructe her in her dutie, eyther for the maried to kepe her fayth to her husband, with Lucretia, or the unmaried to defend her virginitye, with Virginya. Fynalle, that excellent treasore and full librarye of all knowledge yeldes us frelye presidentes for all cases that maye happen; both for imytacion of the good, detestynge the wycked, avoydynge a present mischiefe, and preventynge any evil afore yt fall. Wherein also, as in every acte, there bee certeine speciall principles and rules for the direction of suche as searche out their disposition, so histories do swarme with examples of all kinde of vertues, wherein both the dignitye of vertue and fowlenes of vice appereth muche more lyvelye then in any morall teachyng; seinge therein

Lyvye.

Histories a librarie or store house of knowledg.

is figured under certeine formes and shaps of men and their doyngs past, al and every such diversitye and change, which philosophie doth teach by waie of preceptes. Like as also, touchinge the commodotyes to be coolled oute of antiquityes, Lyvye is of oppinyon that the pleasure and proffitt falleth out of indifferent value to suche as bestowe theyr tyme, wythe uprighte judgement, in the viewe of auncient recordes; for, saith he, 'nihil est aptius ad delectationem lectoris, quam temporum varietates fortunaeque vicissitudines cognoscere, quae etsi exoptabilis in experiendo, non fuerunt tamen in legendo sunt jocunda.' And the frute and chiefe gayne derived of such traveile is in that wee shall see set furthe good and whoalsome lessons of all sortes, whereof wee maye take to ourselves and benefyt of our countreye, suche as we like to followe; and which presentes unto us the true picture and reapport of suche enterprises as had both sinister begynnynges and much worse endes. And yet is yt not sufficient for us to judge that the only frute consistes in readynge the noble actes of good men, seinge that (of the contrarye) to those that studye to resemble theyr vertues th' eschewynge of the evill partes in a nomber of vicious personnes is a singular commoditye: whiche, yf it were not so, the continuaunce of so many hundreth yeares in all common states, as wel heathen as Christened, had not permitted the reading of sondrye Poetes, whose commodies and tragedies import a description figuratyve of the wicked lives of all degrees of men and women; wythout intent to perswade any ymitation that waye, but rather to provoke the multitude, by familyar traines, to avoyde such condicions as they sawe justely reprehended in others. And truly wyth better reason may a man put to the viewe of the worlde any auncient reapport whose profession is to declare a truthe, then to preferr the fained tales of Poetes, whiche yet we see for diverse good respectes tollerated to bee redd in all ages. For lyke as in a familye or auncient house, who hath bene most renowmed of all the stocke leaveth a president and desyer to his posteritye to resemble his doynges, as a glasse and mirroir to theym of most excellent vertues; so, when his stories are published to the common proffyt of al men, every

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY

one goethe aboute to confirme himselfe to the vertuous conversation and lyfe of suche as excelled amongst the elders. Wherein, me seameth, Nycephorus saied veray well that those whiche write Histories and keepe not that which is profitable and praiseworthie as it were in their stoare house at hoame, but rather, beinge benefyciall to the common welthe, do expose so common a profitt to the generall commoditie of all men, are (as it were) the executours of Gods divine providence; because they comprise and packe upp in one worke or volume, as in a common treasore, sondrye sortes of noble deedes, without inhibition or lett to any degree to resorte thereunto and learn, by other mens misdeeds, to direct better his owne doinges, and not with the exchange of the worlde to alter also his minde, but rather, as muche as lyeth in hym, to ymitate the lyfe and conversation of theym who have lyved well before. Wherein, seinge in this worlde the nature of man in all ages, althoughe the singler personnes bee chaunged, remeineth stil one; so, also, the good fortunes, felicities, calamities, and miseries, whyche happen, both in publike governement and to everye private state, tourne alwayes to one effect, and are lyke those of tymes paste; so that, by the benefyt of stories, presentinge afore oure eyes a true kallender of things of auncient date, by the commendacion of vertuous and valyaunt personnes and actes, we be drawen by desyer to treade the stepps of their renowme. And on the other syde, considering the sinister fortune and horrible cases which have happened to certeine miserable soules, we behold both th' extreme points whereunto the fraile condicion of man is subject by infirmitie; and also are thereby toughte, by the viewe of others mens harmes, to eschew the like inconveniences in ourselves. Wherein (righte honorable) like as I have rather touched sleightelye then used tearmes of commendacion at large, according to the worthynes of so precious a jewell as the knowledg of histories—for that now a dayes every mans mouth is open to commende the frute distilling from so florishynge a vine—so, for my part, beyng more forwarde then hable to discharge my zeale in that behalfe, have bestowed some of my voyed howers, whilest I was in the

other sides the Sea, in forcynge certeyne Tragicall Discourses oute of theyr Frenche tearmes into our Englishe phrase, presumyng to commende unto your Ladishypp the frutes and effecte of my travayle; folowyng therein the order of suche as have spente tyme in the lyke studye, who are wounte to declare theyr good wyll, by bestowing theyr labours. Wherewithe, beinge unhappelye denyed other frendshypp of fortune to make good my desyer in gyving an unfayned showe of the dutye and service I owe you and the house whereof you took youre begynnynge, am here, uppon tearmes of humilitye, for preferment of this rude and simple dedication of theis forrein reapports to youre honor. To whose vertues, as I have chiefelye respected to gyve due renowme, by preferrynge a true purtraict of your conversation and lyfe in the vertues, gifts, and ornamentes, of the noble Angeliqua, chaste Parolyna, constant Iulia, and renowned Carmosina, with others, whose integretye of lyfe hath gyven theim a crowne of immortalitye, wyth a glorious remembrance of theyr names for ever after theyr deathe; so my seconde endevor was bent to observe the necessitie of the tyme; chiefly for that, uppon the viewe and examples of oure auncesters lyves, the fraile ymps of this age maye finde cause of shame in theyr owne abuses, wyth desyer to exchaunge their badd condicion and order of lyvynge wyth the studye and desyer to ymitate the vertue of their predecessours, whose lyfe and renowme after death argueth the undoubted rewarde attendynge (as a thynge of course) the vertuouse and well disposed: whereof, the contrarye, appeare wounderfull tormentes and sharpp pennaunce, provided to plage the abbominable and vicious lyver. Besides, it is a principle and chiefe rule in our nature and disposition to bee rather instructed by examples of familyar authorityes then reformed by severitye of lawes; for that the one seames to governe us by awe and commaundement, and in the other appeares a consent of our fancie, marchinge alwayes accordynge to the direction of our owne willes. For whiche cause, the Historians of olde tyme (in theyr severall recordes of the actes, conquestes, and noble attemptes, of Princes and greate men) have lefte oute nothynge servyng

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY

for the ornamente and institution of mannes lyfe; not forgettynge to sett oute also in naturall coollers theyr tyrannye, and other vices, wythe contempte of vertue, yf theyr lyves were founde guiltye in any suche offence. But when they paynte oute a good kynge, a magistrate without touch of partiall or covetous mynde, a courtyar loyall and withoute dissimulation, a minister of the Churche, not smellynge of hypocrysye, but searchyng purelye the honour of God, a ladye chaste, honeste, curteouse, a lover of charitye, usyng a devoute reverence to God and feare to hys lawes—yt is then that they allure, by traines of familyaritye, every succession, to embrace and beholde, as in a glasse, the undoubted meane that is hable, and wyll, brynge theym to the like perfection in vertue. Whyche, also, moved me to use a speciall discrecion in coollynge oute suche examples as beste aggreed wyth the condicion of the tyme, and also were of moste freshe and familyar memorye; to the ende that, wyth the delyte in readynge my dedication, I maye also leave, to all degrees, an appetitt and honeste desyere to honor vertue and holde vice in due detestation. And, albeit, at the firste sighte, theis discourses maye importe certeyne vanytyes or fonde practises in love, yet I doubte not to bee absolved of suche intente by the judgement of the indifferent sorte, seinge I have rather noted diversitie of examples in sondrye younge men and women, approvynge sufficientlye the inconvenience happenynge by the pursute of lyceenceous desyer, then affected in anye sorte suche uncerteyne follyes. For heare maye bee seene suche patternes of chastetye, and maydes so assured and constant in vertue, that they have not doubted rather to reappose a felicitye in the extreme panges of death then to fall by anye violent force into the daunger of the fleshelye ennemye to theyr honour. In lyke sorte appeareth here an experience of wounderfull vertues in men; who, albeit hadd power to use and commande the thinge they chieflye desyered, yet, bridlynge wythe maine hande, the humour of theyr inordinate luste, vanquished all mocions of sensualytye, and became maisters of theym selves, by abstaynynge from that whereunto they felte provocation by nature.

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY

Who desyereth to see the follye of a foolishe lover, passionynge hymselfe uppon creditt, the impudencie of a maide, or other woman, renouncynge the vowe of her fayth or honor due to virginitie, the sharpp pennance attendynge the rashe choice of greate ladyes in seekynge to matche in anye sorte wythe degrees of inferior condicion; or who wisheth to bee privie to th' inconveniences in love, howe he frieth in the flame of the fyrste affection, and after, groweth not onelye colde of himselfe, but is easelye converted into a contrarye shapp and disposition of deadlye hate—maye bee heare assisted wyth more than double experience touchinge all those evills. The curtesie of an enemye on the behalfe of his adversarye, wythe a wounderfull lyberalitye in the other in retournynge the benefyt receyved, is heare set furthe in suche lyvelye coollers, that there seames to lacke nothynge for the ornament and decoracion of suche a woorke. And who takes pleasure to beholde the fyttes and panges of a frantique man, incensed to synister conceites by the suggestion of frettynge jelouzye, forcynge hym to effectes of absolute desperation; the due plage of disloyaltye, in both kyndes, with the glorye of hym who marcheth under the enseigne of a contrarye vertue; a man of the churche, of dissolute lyving, punished with publike reproche; or the villenie of the greedye usurer, makyng no conscience to preferr oppen perjury in suppressynge th' innocent cause,—maye fynde here to satisfye his longynge at full. Neyther do I thinke that oure Englishe recordes are hable to yelde at this daye a *Romant* more delicat and chaste, treatynge of the veraye theames and effectes of love, then theis hystories, of no lesse credit then sufficient authoritie, by reason the moste of theym were within the compasse of memorye. Wherein, as I, with the tormentes that pinched here suche as labored in a passion of follye and fond desyer, maye worke a terror to all those that hereafter unhappelye syp of the cupp of suche ragynge infection, so, touchynge the commendable partes of anye ladye or woman of meaner condicion mencioned in this volume of discourses, I fynde theym farr to lighte to kepe wayghte wyth the ballance wherein are raised the qualityes of your honor; whyche

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY

seame to have a certeyne affinitye and resemblance wyth suche as were the verye vertuse, and causes of commendacion, in any that ever deserved the title of 'moste perfect,' or 'justlye renowmed.' For, yf ever the Quene of Carya was meritorious for her magnamimytye and bountifull disposition, the quene of Saba—whiche some writers call Nycaula, and other Manquedæ—was had in honor for her wysedome (whiche was suche that both the olde and newe testament affirme that she traveled from the ende of the worlde, and extreme confynes of the land of Iuda, to come and heare the doctrine of Salomon, wyth whome she disputed no less learnedly then wyth profonde judgement), or if the constant Ladye Blandina, a Christian borne in the harte of Europe, hath purchassed a crowne of eternetye in kepinge her fayth and vowe to God and the worlde, even to the last seperacion of her sowle and bodye; or yf any other, eyther of antiquitye or familyar experience, of what degree and condicion so ever, have bene noted of renowme for the gyfte of nobilitye in anye sorte—your Ladishipp maye boldelye chalenge place wyth the best; eyther for moderate governement, whose effectes in all thynges you attempte, argue your worthie participacion with the excellent gyftes of temperance and wonderful modestie in the ii moste famous Erles of Leicester and Warwike, your brotherne, and moste vertuous and renowmed Ladye, the Countesse of Huntington, your sister; to whose glorie, and general love amongst all sortes of people in this lande, I nede not add further circumstance, or increase of praise, considerynge the whole state, fixinge theyr eyes uppon theym, wyth an unfained zeale and admiracion of their wisdome and vertues, do advouche in more ample sorte their good will that waye then I am eyther worthie or hable to declare: and for your clemencie to the case of the afflicted, uprighte dealynge, wythout exaction or cause of grudge to any, wonderfull respecte to the honor of your callynge, wyth dutyfull awe and feare of Godd, and obedience to my Lord your husbande, or other arguements or effects wherein consistes the praise of a vertuous mind, or ought to appeare the frutes of true nobilitie—they make you, not so muche honored in your

Executed for religion in Fraunce, by the Emperor Severus, in the yere 178.

contreye, as embrased of strangers who never sawe nor knewe you but by name; who also doubte not to make your sincere and devout order of lyvynge a lookynge glasse to beholde and followe your vertues, and by your order of doing to draw the plat and foundacion of their owne life. Which shal suffice for this tyme (good madam) for the commendation of that whiche is sufficiently perfect of it self, and so generallie honored of all degrees that it nede not th' assistance of any peculiar praise; humblie craving, for my part, a priviledge of favor at your handes, so farfurthe as it maye bee lawfull for me to laye theis firste frutes of my travel uppon the alter alredye garnished wyth other oblacions of your everlasting glorye, as a remembrance of an humble sacrifice whiche I make of my litle labor and contynuall service vowed to your Ladishipp, so longe as God and nature will allow my abode in this miserable vale.

At my chamber at Paris, xxii Iunii, 1567.

Your Ladiship's to commaunde,

GEFFRAYE FENTON.

# GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

## SYR IOHN CONWAY, KNYGHT, to the readers, in prayse of the Translator.

*Like as the slender bee, by travayle in her kynde,*
*Collects her fruite, the sugred sap wherof we dayly fynde,*
*So heare my learned frend, in nature lyke the bee,*
*Hath linckt his labor to his art and yeldes the frute to the.*
*In tongue estraunged from us, whyles this succedynge worke,*
*(As doth the honye in the flourc) by covert meane dyd lurke,*
*He, laborynge with effecte, hath, by his learned payne,*
*Enforst a Frenche man tell his tale in Englishe language plaine.*
*Not for himself, thou knowest, it aunswered his delyght,*
*By skyll to understande the tale as dyd the aucthor write,*
*But, toylynge for thy syke, hath fourm'd his hyve ful fine.*
*Take thou the combe: the payne was his: the honye shal be thyne.*
*Good reader yet beware, least spyder lyke thou take,*
*By cancred kynde, a spightfull stynge, whence he did honye make.*
*Let not, in lewe of payne, a tongue compleate with spyte*
*Attempt to harme (though powre shal want) the thing that he doth writ:*
*For if thou dost, the wies will feele thy festred kinde;*
*And he to whom thou dost such wronge shal so thy nature finde.*
*No doubt our dayes are suche as every man can see,*
*And can at ease, and wyll, perceave the spider from the bee.*
*Allowe his labour, then, and worke that well is done,*
*And thou shalt see thee golden race his muse pretends to roon.*
*Let Zoilus suck the teate that Envie holdes in hell,*
*And say with me, 'God spede the penn that hath begone so well.'*
*Thus hath he his desyre. Thus shalt thou lyve in rest.*
*Thus shall his frynds have, at thy hands, the sume of their request.*

IOHN CONWAY.

## Amici cuiusdam, ad Authorem Carmen Hexametrum.

Floruit antiquo Galfridus tempore Chaucer
Scripsit et eximio permagna volumina versu
Et multi viguere viri quos unica virtus,
Nefandos facile effecit tolerare labores.
Vixerunt: et sola manet, nunc fama Sepultis.
At tua nunc primum, (Galfride) virescere virtus
Incipit, et teneras cum spe producere plantas:
Quæ (scio) quàm primum radices cœperit altos,
Efferet egregios, cum magno fœnore, fructus.
Ergo quisquis erit, qui fortè revolverit ista,
(Cuius mens livore ne quit nec amore moveri,
Et sapit) haud dubito quin te dignabitur illa
Laude, tuo quam tu magno sudore parasti.
Sin minus: hoc uno tibi sat (Fentone) tulisti,
Quod Domina est cui des, dono dignissima tanto,

*Tuus* *M. H.*

# GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

## GEORGE TURBERVILLE

### in praise of the translator of this booke.

*If handy craftesmen have' greate praise for working well*
*By toylyng trade the trifling wares which they for money sel,*
*Then why should Fenton feare' to purchase prayse of men,*
*To whom he franckely gyves the gift of this his pleasant pen?*
*If he his busye browe have beate for our avayle,*
*And for our pleasure taken paynes, why should his guerdon*
*fayle?*
*No gredye golden fee, no jem or jewell brave,*
*But, of the reader, good reporte, this writer longes to have.*
*No man of meanest witt, no beast of slender brayne,*
*That thinckes that such a volume great is wrought with slender*
*payne.*
*The thinge it selfe declares' what toyle he undertooke,*
*Ere Fentons curious fyle could frame this passing pleasant*
*booke.*
*The Frenche to Englishe phrase, his mother language, hee,*
*The darke to lighte, the shade to sonne, hath brought, as you*
*may see.*
*The learned stories erste, and sugred tales that laye*
*Removde from simple common sence, this writer doth displaye.*
*And what, before hee tooke' his painfull quyll to write,*
*Did lurcke unknown, is playnelie now to be discerned in sight.*
*Nowe men of meanest skill, what Bandel wrought, maye vew,*
*And tell the tale in Englishe well that erste they never knewe,*
*Discourse of sundrye strange' and tragicall affaires,*
*Of lovynge ladyes haples haps, theyr deathes, and deadly cares;*
*And dyvers thinges beside, wherby to flee the darte*
*Of vyle deceytefull Cupids bowe, that woundes the lovers harte.*
*Synce this by Fentons meane, and travayle, thou dost gayne*
*(Good reader) yeld hym earned prayse and thanckes for taken*
*paine.*
*Then I that made this verse' shall thincke as well of the*
*As Fentons worke doth well deserve accompted of to be.*

# TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

## PETER BEVERLEY

### in praise of the translator.

Ryfe is the rule that blames the idell mynde,
The ground as great that blaseth travels gayn:
Each tonge can tell a world of vyces kynd,
And scacred lynes appoints offences payne:
But Fenton showes, in swete and sugred stile,
What pleasaunt bayte doth each estate beguile.

What carelesse youth that sees the toylyng ant,
But shames to weare his goulden tyme in vayne;
Whose tender lymmes in sommer tyme do haunt
The fruitfull felds, to rest in Borias Rayne;
When she doth sucke the swete of hervest toyle,
And fynds, in frost, relefe in dryed soyle.

The slender store that som do now possesse
Whose idell boones did loth in youth the lode,
To those that lyve suffyseth to express
The loytring child in age knows no abode;
But as the shippe tost with the byllow greate
So he doth yelde him selfe to fortunes threte.

What pride deserves, what is blacke hatreds hiere,
What envye, theft, what is the mysers mede,
In fyne, what fowle offence, what fact so dire,
But scripture showes his rights if thou list rede,
Wherby each may, both shunne the vilest sinne,
And learne such lyfe as lasting joye doth winn.

But Fenton's frame hath woven another webbe,
His paynfull penn hath died a straunger hewe.
He tels when witt is in his lowest ebbe,
And warns the shunne the bayne that coms by viewe;
Which so doth chaunge the sence of every wight
That from a man to beast it tournes him quitt.

As when the mynd, through want of reasons rayne,
Unbridled yelds to fond affection's force,
And feding still the hart with amours vayne,
Convert each part unto a sencles cors,
Wherin he lyves, so odde from right and lawe
As mountayn beare that prayes devoyd of awe.

And subject thus unto swete folyes lore,
If wishe he winne, he showes what sower swete
The pacient suckes, what bytter blisse in store
He heapes, when age with judgment just shall mete,
When prose shall saye, of all unhappyest wight!
That reapest care, in lyew of hopte delight.

But if disdayne shall quyt him with dispyght,
And yeld him loth for long desired grace,
Then stabbing glayve the desperat brest must smyte,
Or frantycke wyse runne out a savage race.
Thus if of gladd or sad he happ the gayne,
Both have this end: in love nought is but vayne.

Which reckles race, to bring in wisdoms guyde,
And for to raine with bytt of better skill,
My paynfull frend did this discours provide,
As brake to breake affections lawles will.
Gyve Fenton then but freuts of his desert,
And gather thou that best maye please thy hart.

P. B.

# THE TABLE

## DISCOURSE I

PAGE

A wounderful vertue in a gentleman of Sienna on the behalfe of his enemie, whome he delivered from death : and the other, to retorne his courtesye with equall frendshipp, presented hym wyth his syster, whome he knewe he loved entierelie, . 17

## DISCOURSE II

The longe and loyal love betwene Lyvio and Camylla, together wyth theyr lamentable death : the one dyenge of a passion of joye the firste nighte he embraced his mistrys in bedd, the other passed also the same waye as overcome with present sorowe for the death of him whome she loved no lesse then her selfe, . . . . . 85

## DISCOURSE III

A younge Ladye in Myllan, after she had longe abused the vertue of her youth and honor of mariage with an unlawfull haunte of diverse yonge gentlemen, becomes an unnaturall morderor of the frute of her wombe, for that she was forsaken of him who gatt her with childe, . . . . . 129

## DISCOURSE IV

An Albanoise Captayne beynge at the point to dye killed his wyf, because no man sholde enioye her beautie after his death, . 163

## DISCOURSE V

Sondrye perills happenyng to a younge Gentleman of Myllan in the pursute of his Ladie, . . . . . 193

## DISCOURSE VI

The villanie of an Abbot in seeking to seduce a mayde by force, and her vertue in defending her honor against him and his companions of trayson, . . . . . 247

# DISCOURSE
# I

A wonderful Vertue in a gentlman of Syenna on the behalf of his ennemye, whom he delivered from Death; and the other, to retorne his courtesye with equall frendshyp, presented him with his sister, whom he knew hee loved entierlye.

# GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

## DISCOURSE I

### THE ARGUMENT

I MEANE not here to increase the merveile of menne withe a particular description of the sumptuous buildinges of Princes, the magnificall scites and scituations of greate men's houses, nor restore to memory the wounderfull pollecies and artificiall devises of oure auncestoures, in making plats, and firme fondacions of castels and cities, in the bottom of the sea; and muche lesse trouble you withe a reaporte of their ingenious travaill in castinge downe hils and makynge craggy mountaynes flat with the face of the earthe, or forcing stonie rockes, with places heretofore impassible, to oppen and make waye to their huge armies: but I have in presente intente, to discover unto you the mervellous effects of love; which, excedinge the opynion of common thynges, seames more straunge then the curious construction and frame of any pallais for necessitie or pleasure, threatrie, or place of solace, buylded by art or industrie of man, or other stately court, (what sqware, quadrante, or triangle forme, soever, it conteines), or other misticall worke, yeldinge cause of wonder to the universitie of the earthe; seing that a mortal grudge, grounded uppon greate spite, confirmed with the continuance of a longe time, and pursued extremelye wythe bloddye persecution and unnaturall crueltie, is not onely converted upon a sodaine into perfecte frendeshippe, but also, by an effecte and operation of love, made so indissoluble, that no future accidente, or synister devise of enemyes, could once make a breache, and muche lesse utterly dissolve, the league of amity so happely begone and sewerly knite together by the vertue of affection whyche wee call commonlye the passion procured by love. Wherunto is also added a like effecte of a thankefull mynde, arguing unto us (whythe a famyliar example) that as ingratitude is the greatest vice that raynes in this disposition of man, and principall ennemy to the honor of nobilitie,

Hannyball forced a passage for his armi through the Alpes.

Ingratitude the chiefeste ennemy to the honor of nobilitye.

soo the contrary, deserveth by justice the tytle of the moste precious vertue that is. Wherein, as the Thebans were shamfully reproched for the respect of their greate Capttaines Epaimynondes and Pelopides, so the Plateons (on the contrarye) were worthely renoumed for the large recompence and consideracion they used, to the benefyte of the Greekes who delivered them from the servitude of the Persians. Like as, also, the Sycyoniens weare yet the crown of eternal commendacion for the thankefull returne of the curtesye of Aratus; by whome they were frankely taken oute of the handes of cruell tyrantes. If the acte of Philip Marya, late Duke of Myllan, deserveth detestacion for the unnaturall crueltye he committed uppon the person of his wife (who, albeit, was equall in nobilitie, exceded him in the giftes of fortune and large possessions, of indifferente beawtye to contente a reasonable man, nothinge inferior to the beste ladye of the countrye in the ornaments of nature and giftes of grace, and yelding him besides suche honor and honest love as was necessary for the state of mariage, yet, notwithstandinge, was he so unthankefull to all these benefites, that, after he had colled the flower of her beautye, and forced her to passe an assuraunce of her goods and lyvynge to his use, hee committed secret execution, and washed his handes in the blod of th' infortunate ladye, contrarye to all civilytie or lawe of nature), if he, I saye, seame justly meritorious of reproche, we maye worthely imparte treble prayse to a barbarous Turke and admirall of the countrey of Arabia, who, being overthrowen in the bataile foughten in that countrey by Baudwin King of Ierusalem, him-selfe and wife prisoners, with his treasure and municion of warre at the disposition of the sayde Kinge, and beinge dismissed frely without exaction or raunsom, and his wife restored withoute violacion, or force of her bodye, judged it a vertu not to be overcome in magnificence and liberalitye, and a mortal vice to beare the title of an unthankefull Prince. Whereof he made declaracion: for that, not longe after, the sayde Bawdwine beinge beseged of the infidels, and, by distresse of warre, at point to fal into their mercy, the sayde admyral, not unmindefull of the compassion he showed upon his misery, brake into him by nighte, and, withe certeine assistantes of horsemen, prevented his present perill, and set him safelye uppon his waye from al offer or feare of daunger. All whiche I have coated in this introduction for that my historye importes ii. examples of semblable substance, the one exposinge a

# GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

DISCOURSE I

wonderfull effecte of frendshipp on the behalf of his ennemie, and the other retorninge his liberalitye withe suche ample consideration that there is no degre in any corner of Christendom but may se an experience of vertue in the doings of them both. Wherin I wishe chiefly a perticipacion of the fruite of such examples to all sortes of our countriemen in Englande; to th' ende wee maye forme our lyves upon the verteous presedents of such strangers as, preferinge vertue afore vice, have bene more curious to get a true renoume of reputation, then carefull of a vaine glorious or folyshe pomppe of the world.

N the Recewles or comentories of Tuskan, I find special remembraunce of a mortall grudge betwene ii of the moste noble houses in Syenna, called Salimbino and Montanino: whereof, as bothe the one and other were of semblable reputation for honour and height of estate, so were they of equall rule and authoritie in the governement of their publike weale. Whose parentes, allbeit, and predecessours, were of singler commendation, by the vertue of mutuall societye whiche appeared so entyer and indissoluble betwene theim by manye discentes, that the writers in that age douted not to tearme theym no lesse true myrroers and patterns of perfect frendship than either Horestes or Pylladas, which the Romain oratour makes so famous by peculiar commendation; yet, according to the opinion of Aristotle, as children commonly do rather excede their fathers in vice then resemble them in vertue, so the posteretyes of these noble houses, in place to persever in the vertue of their parentes or treade in the steppes of their aunciente amytie, in the verie entrey of their florishing time, when al men were in expectacion of verteous frutes like to their fathers, withe hope to confirme the league of their long frendeshippe, they embrased sinister occasions of civil mutines, grounding great quarrels upon slender or smal

Children do commonly rather excede their fathers in vice then resemble them in vertue.

substance, with a dispocition and equall desyre the one to pursewe the other wyth suche fatal hate and unnaturall tyranny, that as the one was almost brought even to the brinke of utter desolation of hys house and revenue, so the other (triumphing, allbeit, in the conquest of his enemye) escaped not only without perentory perill of himselfe, and losse of a nomber of his deare kinsmen and companions of race, but also was enjoyned to so harde a penance that he lyved alwayes after in the continuall grudge and desdaine of the people: the viewe of whose malice, preferring a wonderful remorce of conscience, with remembrance of the fowlenes of the facte passed, pursewed hym with alarams of unnaturall and frettinge disquiet of minde, even untill the last separation of his soule and body. And here, if you conferre the quarrell with the cause, and waighe in indiffrent ballance the mischives, morders, with infinit inconveniences, derived of so small occasions, you nede not doubt to joyne in opinion with Paulus Iovius, and other writers worthy of no lesse credyte then of greate fame for learning and skil; who, amongest other generall descriptions of Italy, giveth her this peculiar commendacion, that, beyng subject to th'influence of a crabbed clymate and quarrelus constellation, termes her to be (of al the world) the only storehouse for percialites and civill faccions, and market place of tumultes and suborned trobles: which I colde also justefie by th'autority of the warres betwene the Florentines and the Syennoys, with other free states in the countreye; besids the civill discencions among the nobility, with unnaturall persecutions of families and kindreds; saving that the discourse wolde seame more tedius then necessarye, and keep me to longe from the principal points of my history, which calles me now to perform my promisse, and satisfye the expection of the rearder. No man douteth (I am sewer) that, as wel antiquity as people of present being, have not had in general regard and peculiar delyte the noble exercise of hunting divers kynds of chases; no lesse for the respect of pleasure, then evitacion of divers discomodities, happenying oftentymes to the husbandmen by the wilde boare and wolfe, with other beasts of equall fercenes and like annoye. Wherin, albeit, besides the con-

Ytaly, a store house for mutinies.

Th' exercise of hunting is both pleasant and profitable.

DISCOURSE I

tentment of the mynde, ther is to be coolled a necessarye fruite of double commoditie; the one to sturre up the ydle crewe of delicate persons haunting the houses of great men to the exercise and ymitation of honest traveill; the other, representyng the very sleyghtes and pollecies in warre, instructes the young gentlemen, not hable as yet to endure the hardnes and experience of the fyelde, to discerne the advauntage of the place, the subtelty in dressing his ambushe for beynge discovered, his tyme to dysplaie the same to the disadvantage of the enemy, the order how and when to geve the charge, with an enforcynge of corage to persewe the chasse so farre as good governement will give leave. Yet is not thys pleasaunt skirmishe and necessary recreation for youth wythout some argument of greate, and almoste absolute assurance of diverse sortes of misfortunes: for wee reade that Meleager loste his lyfe in killing the wilde boare of Calidona: Cephale for the lyke respect kylled his deare frende Procris: the notable philosopher, Acast, having th' only credite for education of the heir apparaunt of his prince, and honouring albeit the childe with more then an ordinarye affection, yet hunting on a tyme among the deserts of that countreye, contrary to the wil of the King (for that he was warned by a propheey of the death and distruction of his soune in castynge darte at the boare), slewe hym whom hee loved as muche or more then himselfe. Besides, for a familiar profe of my allegation in this case, yt is not yet viij yeres since the Countie Palatine, one of the chiefe princes of Germany, being lost of hys companye in pursewing the chasse of a fierce boare, was overthrowen, horse and man, and in daunger to be devoured by the furye of the beaste, if, by good chaunce, hys ryder with ij freshe dogges had not ben at hand to prevent his perill. So, likewise, by the hunting of a wilde boare, grewe the bloddy quarel betwne theses ij houses. For, having one day, by force and polycie of men and dogges, kylled one of the greatest boares about Syenna; in the particular commendacion which every man gave to the doughtines of his dogge, there began to kindle a kinde of mislike in the hartes of the twoo younge lordes, whiche—with the heate of the wine wherein they

The proffit in hunting.

The daunger of a prince in Iermanye in hunting.

goolled without regarde after their travaill, and the bloudde being chaffed with the presse and nomber of termes of reproche—bolked out at laste to cruell blowes ; which (without respect of personnes) seamed so to occupye the place for the tyme, that besides a nomber that were hurte on bothe partes, the Salimbins hadde the worste, for that one of theyr chiefe was lefte for dead in the fielde. Wherewith, the fraye discontinued for that time, and every man retired ; the Montanins, not gladd of the victorye, for that theye doubted a revenge ; and the Salimbins, contented by force with theyr present fortune ; attendynge, notwithstandynge, th' assistance of a better tyme, to redeme the bloude of theyr kinsman, not with equall losse of their enemy, but with utter ruine and subversion of the whole house of their adverse parte. Whiche they fayled not accordingly to performe with suche hoate expedicion and power, that, after diverse publike skermishes and private combats, with indecent murders, (the contrary parte having consumed the moste parte of their rente and revenewe in meintainynge garrisons to withstande theyr malyce within the compasse of no longe tyme) they hadd brought to extreme depopulation the whole kindred of the Montanins, excepte one younge gentleman named Charles, who, findynge himselfe to weake to resyste any longer the rage of his adversaries, retired to a contentement by force and gave place to their furie : and they, also, fyndynge the fielde abandonned without any to make head against them, dismissed their angrye humor and layde asyde their bluddye weapons, beinge dolled with the heavye and mortall blowes uppon theyr conquered enemies. This Charles and laste remainder of the house of Montanino, being appointed by destenie to lyve yet in spite of his enemies, stirred not out of the towne of Sienna ; where, as a solitary man in the presse of his adversaries, he lived without eyther salutynge or hauntynge the place of theyr repaire ; being favored, notwithstandinge, of the moste parte of the cytie, for that, after so many broyles and horley borleys of warre—which, with the fiske, had converted the greatest parte of his porcion and inheritaunce into nothynge—he lyved, notwithstandynge, of that lytle whiche fortune had lefte him, in

A courte of peynall forfeitures, or condemnation for money.

DISCOURSE I

honest sorte; meintainynge a traine accordynge to the state and condicion of his lyvynge; having in the house with hym, the companye of his syster, whiche the gods seamed to reserve, not onelye for his speciall consolation in so greate a calamitie, but also, in restoryng theyr house to hys auncient entier and beinge, to buylde agayne a newe and perfecte frendshipp uppon the fyrste fondacion, and confirme eftesones by her vertue a perpetuitie of indissoluble amitie betwene her brother and the house of his extreame adversary. Her name was Angeliqua; whose speciall ornaments by nature, and peculiar gyftes of God, chalenged, not onlye an equalytye, but a degre above, the beste and greatest dames of the countreye. So seamed she justlye meritorious of that name, without doinge wronge to anye; because her wisdome, womanlye behaviour, with humble curtesye, made suche declaracion of her honestye and vertue, that they whiche hated theyr house, and detested the remembraunce of their race, could not close their mouthes from her due commendacion, nor forbeare to wishe that theyr doughters and children were of semblable disposition. Suche is the operacion and force of true vertue in the hartes of suche as embrace her with unfayned sinceritie; exposinge, in lyke sorte, suche frutes as seame wondrous in the eye of worlde and excede the common imaginacion of men, by reducinge the confusion of kindreds into an entier of everlastynge amytie, and of a mortall enemy to make a moste assured frende. Whereof, they that doubte of the goodnes of so greate a gyfte, maye be satisfyed by the present proffe of this Angeliqua; who so fedd the eares of the cytie with the generall brute and commendacion of her vertue, that, in one moment, he, which earst was chiefe and captaine of the warre against theim, and seamed invincible against all the ayde and assistaunce they could procure, is nowe become a slave, and most subject to the viewe and contemplation of her beautie; in suche sorte as, by litle and litle, he grew into termes of extreme affection and undowted zeale towardes her, whose name he hated, earst, no lesse then the cankered styng of the cruell cockatrice. Wherin, as the humor of his love seamed to excede the ordinarie impressions of men

The frutes which true vertue exposeth.

in that case, so he neyther was hable to resiste the hoate sommaunce of his newe appetit, nor kepe warre any tyme with the suggestion of his sodayne desire; but, as one that felt himselfe stricken with the thonderbolt of his destynie, gave place to his sentence, and entred into devise with himselfe what waye too use, to wynne the encounter of his fancie. The remembraunce of the late wronge he had done theim seamed a great impediment to his purpose: neyther had he the meane to demaunde her in mariage whose teares were skarce drye in bewailynge the desolation he hadd so lately thondred upon al their house, the simple view and recorde wherof, preferred just cause of dispaire to obtaine the good will of her brother. Wherwith, feling a daily increase of his passion, with continuall diminution and unlikelyhod of meanes to releve his torment, (specialy for that he had imprisoned his liberty, where no raunsome could serve to redeme it; and that love had bounde hym to so harde a pennaunce, that the only pleasure he had in life was to thinke upon her whome dispaire denied him to reclaime by anye meanes) he began to curse thee first cause of the quarell, and wyshe the huntyng of the boare hadd never ben tollerable in Italy; inveighyng withall agaynste the malice of hys fortune that seamed to be his guide in the pursuete of so great persecution, and now, in the hope and expectation of reste and repose from toyle, to committ hym to the mercy of a martirdome more intollerable then the torment of the whele, and of lesse hope to be delivered then the damned soules out of th'everlasting flame in hell. Wherin also his chiefeste greffe and grudge of minde semed to stande upon double termes; both for that he durst neyther discover his disease to any his owne frendes, whom he knewe wouldc rather mislike his request then be moved to compassion upon hys case or studye to releve his distresse, nor promise himselfe any liklihod (and much lesse assurance) ever to cooll eyther flower or fruite of his affection to Angeliqua; for that he thought she had no reason to remorse upon him in whose face appeared yet the fresh remembraunce of the late revenge and destruction of her kynsmenne.

But what? Who doughteth of the tickle disposition of

DISCOURSE I

fortune; or is not perswaded that the doings of men are as subject to chaung and alteration as the elament to mutability and diversetie of complexions, at such time as the greate Iupiter, somoning the winds, and violence of other weather, to quarell with the calme and quiet skye, eclypsyng the naturall clerenes of the son by converting him into sondry sortes of darke and dim colloures? Or what constancye or assurance is to be reapposed in our worldly affaires, seynge the veray thoughtes and imaginations of men are disposed and governed by the revolucion and course of tymes? Wherin the philosopher is of opinion that no degre is dispensed from the clymat of the constellation. 'For,' saith he, 'the favors and displeasures of princes are neither so mortal nor of such continuance, but being incident to conversion, we see in one momente an assured conjunction of frendship with him who earst pursewed our subvercion with mortall hate. And truly he that weigheth the comutation of thinges with indiffrent judgment may justly note him of gret simplicity, that resolves perpetuity or continual stay or abode, in any thing that is either accidental or proper to man.' Wherin as I am sufficiently justefyed by auncient records and foraine authorities, so he that with diligence will coate the Chronicles of England and Fraunce within theis C yeares, shall fynde choyse of examples to cleare his doubt, and confirme him in the contrary opinion: which, byeause it importes such consequence, and rather excedes then seams conveniente for the compasse of my present intent, I leave them to the construction of the diligent reader, who, syfting nerely the monumentes of that time, may find thee more alteracion and chaunge of estates in bothe those realmes within lesse then so many yeres then in the space of ii C yeares afore. For he may see thear of credible reaport, that he that governed as king, sittinge in the seate royall of the realme, making the whole multitude tremble at the voyce of his commaundimente, was sodainly deposed and skarcely eskaped the infamie of a cruell and slaundrous death; and, on the other part, the other that attended only the fatal destruction of himselfe and famuly, is not only restored to the scepture of the kingdom, but also

All things are subject to chaunge.

in a moment sytts in the judgemente seate upon vengaunce and correction of theym which had geven sentence and awarded the writ of execution against himself. Calyr, one of the iiii great Bassyas of the greate Turke, had no lesse awe and authoritie over the whole Mahometian empire then undowted credit with the emperour and mighty monarche himself; who wold never consulte of any enterprise without the councell of this captaine, nor perform any expedition without his company; and yet, upon a suddaine, and without any cause (saving the malicious appetite of his maister), he was cruelly strangeled in presence, and by commaundment of him whom he had so faithfully honoured and served. On the contrarye syde, the valiante Argon Tartare, after he was entred into armes agaynst his uncle Tangodor Cany, being taken and adjudged to passe by the rigor of torments, and after receive the due hier of unnatural conspiracy, as he was sent into Armenya to be executed, being at the point to commit himself to the mercy of the tormentors, and paste al hope or expectation of aid, was sodainly reskewed by certain Tartarians of the garrison and household servants to his late father deceased, and restored after to the dominion and kingdom of Tartaria, in the yere of our lord a thousaund-two-hondreth-fouer-skore-and-five. Th' example of th' empresse Adalede makes no lesse profe herin then the former recordes; for, being unhappely fallen into the handes of the tyrante Beranger, the usurper at that tyme of th' empire, after she had longe tried the curtesye of this miserable and wretched disposicion, beinge at the verye brinke and place of execution, where was no likelihode nor imagination of ayd, had th' assistance of a good fortune; for, avoidynge his cruell sentence, by a secrete and soddaine flighte at the same instaunte, was maried after to Otton, the firste of that name; and lived till shee sawe the juste revenge of her wronge upon the same usurper and his race, by Otton her sonne succeedinge his father in the monarkye. All which, of no lesse authoritie then undoubted credit, I have prefferred as assured paterns of the mobilitie and uncertein stay of the state of the affaires of this world. Wherin, also, when th' occasion dothe offer, you maye note a verefication, or lyke

Deathe the due hyer of unnaturall conspiracy.

DISCOURSE I

accident, in the sequeill of this Montanyno; who, after the depopulation of his house by civill warre, and the moste parte of his porcion wasted in the supplye of that quarell, fell into a misery more tragicall then the other, and of lesse hope of ayde or delyverye; and yet, beinge passed th' extreme sommonce of his fortune, and attendynge the fatall and last momente of execution, after he had dismissed all expectation of succoure, his deliveraunce appeared by hym that procured and pursewed his distresse. And the same miserye that firste moved his ruine, reserved suche a vertue in the ende of his tragedye, that, by th' only assistance of him whom he thoughte to have sworne his destruction, he was restored with more assurance and contentement of minde then afore.

But nowe to our amarous Salimbino, who, tossed in the stormye sea of his unquiet thoughtes, was no lesse passioned on the behalfe of Angeliqua then she moste carefull to comforte the calamitie of her brother, with indever to lyve together in mutuall tranquillitye, accordynge to the somonce of nature and decree of lawe of kynde; neyther respectynge the tormente of her ennemye whiche shee knew not, nor regarding to pranke up herselfe to please th' appetite of any other. And, albeit, it was his chaunce sometime to accoaste her in the strete, or other place, where he forgat not to give her the *Bachilomano*, with al shew and argumente of humble duty; and she, in like sorte, retorned his Italian salutation wyth semelye and not semblable curtesye; yet sawe he no meanes to remove the dispaire of her good will, nor she hable to discerne the cause of his new and soddaine greting. But, as he suffred himselfe at the first to be subject to the somonce of love, and gave him previledg without resistance to builde his bower in the bottome of his hart; so, being now to weake to supplant him who hath conquered and made himselfe lord over al the ports in him, he is bounde to beare the yoke of continuall passioun, without licence or liberty to be dispensed from the least assaulte and alaram which that hellishe tormentor ministreth to suche as marche under the enseigne of his awe: neyther hath he other consolation in his present distresse but such as is appointed to fede the desolate mynds

A kinde of curtesye or amarus greting in Italye.

of desperat lovers; moderating in some part the force of their affliction with imagination that the benefyte of time wil, at laste, eyther putte the praye of their desyre into their handes, or els geve ende to their disquiette by som suborned abridgment of their naturall daies. Wherin, as he languished with no lesse perplexitie of minde then happeneth to suche as by fate are forced to passe throwe the miserye of suche doleful traunces, so, as he attended in this sorte the gift of a better occasion, beholde! th'approch of the second desaster or tragedye of the unhappye Montanino.

Hope is a chiefe comforte in affliction.

For within the cytye of Syenna dwelte a longe nosed marchaunte; who, for the moste part, as they be more gredy to gette then worthie of that which they have, so do they seldom or never respect the meane so they may finger that which they wish. He had joyning to the uttermoste subburbes of the cytye a faire house, environed with large demaines, whereuppon confyned, on al partes, certaine peces of grounde of the saide Montanyno; which, with a bare house in the towne, as it was al that the malice of his fortune had left hym of the ample patrymonye of his parentes, so this hungrye burgeys, thinkinge it no offence or grudge of conscience to enlarge his lyvinge withe the porcion of his neighboure (knowinge well enoughe that after so many occasions of greate expenses, he was not onlye in distresse for monye, but wanted other necessary furniture) sent his broaker to boarde him for the sale of his lands in the contrey, with commission to geve hym a thousande duckats for those groundes which joyned to his lordshippe without the subberbes. Wherin his request was frustrate, and he out of hope that waye to wyn th'effect of his desyer, for that Charles was resolved to make store of those groundes above the rest of the lytle that was left him; chefly for that besydes they were percell of th'auncient possessions of his parents; yet he reserved a spicial zeale to those landes, because the viewe of theim restored a freshe remembrance of suche as in maney ages before had borne the greatest swaighe in that publike weale. Wherwyth the covetus villayne, not contente with the reasonable deniall of the gentleman, did not imediatlye dismisse his desier to get

DISCOURSE I

that which he ought not to have wished, but determined not only to win it by unorderly meanes, but also for reveng of the plain answere of the Montanyn entred into devise to subborne some meanes to have it at a lesse price, and not without the hazarde and perill of the lif of that pore gentilman; followinge therin the detestable example of th'injuste Iesabell, who procured the death of Naboothe, to th'ende she mighte enjoye his possession. Wherin he was furthered everye waye, but chiefly with th'assistance of the tyme. For at the same instaunte, by reason of the mutuall quarels and civil dyscentions that raigned longe before in the moste partes of Italye, moste of the nobilitie were driven the countrye; and those few that remayned, lyved not only under the awe of town clarks and catchepowles, chosen by the rurall crew, but also had small assuraunce of savetye in their townes or cities: where, for the more subjection and awe of the gentlemen, this villanous sect of cursed caterpillers made a lawe not muche unlike the tyrannous statute which the Athenians hadde in the time of Solon, that no man, of what degree or condicion soever hee were, shoulde, neyther by himselfe, nor procurement of any other, go aboute to purchasse the reappeale or restitution of any that were banished their countreye, upon payne to yelde to the fyske a thousande florentes; with addicion, that if he were not hable to aunswere the condemnacion within ten days, to loase his head in remembrance of the forfeyte. Who markes well the misterye of this lawe, maye easely judge the viperus meaninge of those wretches, who rather resemble the barbarous tirants and infidels without faith then seame to have the hartes of true Christians. And happye is hee that is not borne under the governemente of suche a state; where they doo not onlye shutte the gates of compassion against their innocente neighbours and frends, habandoned their countrey for peculiar grudges one against another, but also punished, by an unnaturall crueltye, the vertue of suche as seke to supply the affliction of theym that oughte to be of equall regarde and honor to the best of them. And, besides that this oppressour of innocents was bothe one of the lawe makers and chiefe minister and commaunder of the same,

An ungodlie lawe.

yet was he sewer of a seconde assistaunce, which seamed no lesse available to him then the advantage of his power or authoritie. Wherefore, dispencinge withe no time in the execution of his devilishe devise, he somoned Don Charles by write to appeare before the Senat, where was layde afore hym the breache of the sayde lawe. And for a more profe or plaine of the matter, th'accusation was no soner published then he hadde at his elbowe double choise of perjured witnesses; who, what by the awe of his authoritie, and th'infecting somonce of certeine peces of golde wherwith he had fyled their tonges afore, advouched th'appeale by othe; deposing further, that they knewe where he hadde solicited to redeme diverse of his banished frends, seking to supplant the state of the city by restoring the nobles and gentlemen to their auncient rule and authoritie. Whiche made the pore Montanyn in suche double amaze of doubt and feare, that he was not only voyde of councel for the present, but in dispair to defende his right againste the malice of the whole state; chiefly for that the procurer of the fyske, smellynge th'approche of so greate a gaine, awarded authorities to arrest his body to prison, and pursued his processe with suche expedicion, that, within vi dayes, he was condemned uppon the statute of rappeale, and to paye the forfait within ix dayes after, or els to leave his head in pawne of the payment. The lawe imported suche rigour that there was no place for mediacion or sute of entreatye, and the eares of the justice were closed against the complainte of innocents; neither durst any man inveighe on his behalfe, for feare of hym that was th'author of th'act. And the ayde of kynsmen is as colde in that countrey as in other places. And frendes nowe a dayes resemble the raven or hungry kyte, who never flyeth but towardes the place where they hope to fynde some thinge to praye upon; so the frendes of our age be fled so far from the vertue of true frendshipp, that they will not onlye refuse to releve hym whome God and nature hath bounde them to susteine, but also make no conscience to disclaime the name of a kinsman to the nearest allye they have; and that without any cause, onlesse you will impute it to the want of equall welthe. Wherein mine owne experience moveth me

DISCOURSE I

DISCOURSE I

to make a chalenge to some in England; if my power were as indifferent to pleade with hym, as I have juste reason to put hym in remembraunce of his fault. Albeit that quarels is tollerable which marcheth under the flagge of innocency and truth; and juste objections wil make the guilty blushe.

But nowe to the sorowful Montanyn, who, complayninge the points of his desaster in a darke prison, where was no kynd of consolation, nor yet the offer of any eccho to resounde his dolorous cryes, was saluted the nexte daye with a copye of his sentence diffinitive, wherein he was taxed to the some of a M florents or losse of lyfe within ix dayes. Here he founde what it is to have an evill neyghbour, and how greatly they do thurst that desiere to drinke of any other mans cupp, but chiefly the insatiable longyng of suche as are with child for another mans lyvyng. And, albeit his conscience was without grudge for any offence or breache of the lawe, yet his grief seamed of harde tolleracion, because the cursed trayson of a cankard clowen should triumphe over hym so farre, that, to quenche the glot of his covetous rage, he shoulde be forced to disinherite himselfe, and leave without succour his dear syster: who, for her part, was so dolorous on the behalf of this newe desaster fallen upon her brother that she sturred not out of her chamber, nor once suffered her eyes to bee drye from teares since the firste newes of that sorowfull accident; whiche she complayned with more vehemency because she sawe a present approche of perentory destruction to the litle remeinder of the whole house. 'Alas,' saith she, 'is the crueltye of fortune of suche rigorous condicion, or her malice of suche perpetuitye, that she will graunte no dispense, nor admit any oblacion or offer to purchasse her favor? Or is ther no sacrafice to satisfye the angry disposition of the heavens, who ceasse not to thonder whole millions of mishappes upon this desolate and wretched house of ours, with continuaunce of their angrye regards, even untill th'utter dissolution of the same? Howe much better had it ben for us fewe as remaine of the dekayed stocke and withered generacion of Montanyno, to have passed, amongest the rest of our companions, by the edge of

the sworde of the enemye, then, in lyvynge, to be miserable partakers of the unjuste malice of such as are not onely common enemies to innocency, but, bearynge a naturall grudge to the veray remembraunce and name of nobility, do hunt with open mouth (as the ravenyng wolfe) to devour the discents of noble kynd! How can this beare the name of a free cytie, or justely merite the tytle of a state not incident to servile lawe; where the governement passeth under the conveyghe of a confused multitude, whome nature hath ordeined to drawe the yoke of other mens awe, and lawe of kynde (in their nativitie) framed to be subject to suche as their rurall force constraines to stoope to the sentence of their dome? Ah! brother,' saith she, with a freshe supplye of sorowfull teares, 'howe rightely can I conster the cause of thy presente trouble and indifferent undoing of us both? The example of thy wronge argues sufficiently the detestable disposition of our cursed Senatours, who seam more gredye to hunte the chasse of unlawfull and fylthye gaine, then carefull to kepe their conscience without spott or grudge of manifest oppression and wronge. For yf the desyre of thy litle livynge in the countrey, and glisteringe shewe of thy greate house in the open gaze and eye of the whole worlde passing by the streetes, had not sturred up the covetous humour of that ravenouse marchaunte, thou hadst lyved free from care, and thy estate farre from anye question in the Senate House; neyther woulde anye man have charged thee with imputacion of a thing, which I wold to God thou hadst not onely undertaken, but also broughte in effecte; to the ende thou mightest have bene the author, and I the witnes, of the juste revenge of this villanous crew, whose naturall malice, more then eyther reason or justice, doth clogge the with this harde imposition of manifest wronge. There is no reason that a peltynge marchaunt, never norrished in anye skole of cyvill or curteous education, other then in a shoppe amongest prentises and companions of his owne calibre, or the son of hym that is a slave and servile borne by kynde, shoulde eyther beare office in a common-welthe, and muche lesse sytte in judgement of theym whose harts by nature abhorres to be tryed by the

DISCOURSE I

barbarous voice of so vile and base people. Oh! how happy be theis states and countreys, where kynges gyve lawes, and princes use respect of favor to suche as resemble them in condicion and vertue: neither hath he greate cause to grudge with his dome, that hath his cause debated in the presence of his prince, and his sentence published by suche as bee of equall honor and reputatyion: where wee, alas! maye justlye exclaime againste oure cursed constellacion, that hath broughte us forthe in so unhappie a tyme, and made us, not onely incident, but subject and slaves to a councell more perverst and partial then corrupcion itselfe! I woulde oure predecessours, or some good fortune of forreine tyme, by reducynge this countrey into a monarke, had established a seat royall of a kynge, wythe authoritye that only his seede and succession shoulde governe the whole, rather then by leaving it thus dispersed into diverse confuced liberties, to make us a mutuall praye one to another. For have we not the Frenchemen at oure backes, and the army of the greate Vicare of Rome on the one side, with the subtil Florentins ready to invade us on the other side, in suche sorte as who so is hongry maye boldly praye uppon us without resistaunce. And yet, for a more increase of our wrechednes, wee mainteine warre with ourselves; and the beste parte are subdued and made thrall to suche as are not worthy anye waye to be vallet to the worste of us that feles our selves greved with suche affliction. But what can satisfy the covetousnes of man, or what benefit can stay hym that is given to perfidie or falsehod; and to what ende, alas! serve my teares or tunes of dolorous exclamacion, if not in recordyng the circumstaunce of oure mutual grief, to restore a freshe remembraunce of thy peculyar desaster? Oh deare brother! whose destinies, I see, will not dismisse the rigor of their dome, till they have brought us both to the brinke of extreme subvercion. Albeit, yf the offer of my bodye in sacrifice, or other mortall execution, wolde serve to redeme thy libertye, and preserve thy possession in entier, assure thy selfe that thy pore Angeliqua wold be no lesse readye to make exchaunge of her life, for the raunsom of thy contentement and quiet, then theis

wyde-mowthed rokes do seke and gape to devoure thy honour and living.' DISCOURSE I

And as the dolorous lady was thus in torments of dule, with more passion on the behalfe of her brother then care any waie for herself, the pore Montanine, standing betwen a hard sentence and a most unhappie fortune, considered the laste day of fatall respit to draw faste to his date. And having no choice of meanes to moderat the rigour of the law, but by satisfying the whole demaunde of the fiske, which also he was not hable to levye by any credit or assistaunce of his frendes, reposed his laste assuraunce and refuge of deliverye in the sale of his lande. And as the taste of life is pleasaunte to all men, and eche degree by nature is carefull to prolonge it to the laste hower, so, accordynge to the extreme condicion of his present case, he resolved to employe the pryce of his lyvinge in the raunsom of his presente trouble. Wheruppon he despatched immediatlye one of the sergeantes, or officers of the gaile, to the corrupt money-maister that was firste and all the cause of his undeserved mischief, with commission to conclude the bargaine for a thousand duckats, accordynge to the rate of his firste offer. But the traiterous wretch and pernicious patterne of iniquitie, knowinge the extreme pointes of the pore prisonner, who stoode nowe in water up to the chyn, with more likelihode to sinke then assuraunce to recover the fyrme lande, thoughte that his deathe woulde deliver him free possession of his lyvinge, without th' assistaunce of money: wherefore, triumphyng alredy in the glorye of so great a fortune, with expectation to have the lande by speciall awarde of the fiske and Senat, retorned the messenger with aunswere, that, albeit of late he had desier to enlarge his demayne in the subberbe with a pece of his possession adjoynynge, yet, upon a further viewe and consideration of the grounde, he was nowe of minde that his price far exceded the valewe, neither coulde he make so presente a proffit upon so small a plat of inheritaunce, as with the use and interest of so greate a summe of money as a M ducats. Notwithstanding, for a supply of his present nede, he was contented to give him vii C florents,

The taste of life pleasante to all men.

DISCOURSE I

and that more for the relief of his distresse then any respecte of commoditie by the bargain. Here maye be noted the vertue and operacion of the covetous mynde, infected with the desyer of fylthie gaine, whose frutes are to thurste after other men's goods, and glory in the dekaye of their neighbour, with a dispositioun to converte the ungracious spoyles of their brethren into a pleasaunt pray to their ravening appetite, without regarde notwithstanding to th' express inhibicion of God, in diverse place of the Scripture, or respecte to the dutie of his conscience, or burthen of his soule. Wherin, besides the peynall threates of our Saviour in the worlde to come, he seames also to hyer a tormentor to molest his quiet during his abode here: for the more he is in devise to encrease his welth, the faster decreaseth his quiet, and himselfe so subject to declinacion, according to the wordes of the Apostle, that a covetous man taketh more revenge of himselfe beinge on lyve, then his enemy when he is deade; neyther doth he consume the daye in other devises then in accumulacion of threasor, nor yeldes charitie to any but his golden coffers, whome he will not deffraye, nor once deminishe, of a simple denier, if it were to redeme the lyfe of hys naturall father. You have hard his former offer of a thousand ducats, with no lesse desier to have it at that price; and now you see he doth not only refuse it, but in a mockerie makes a disdainfull tender of vii C florents, attending a further benefyt by the deathe of the unfortunate Montanin; who, no lesse astonyed at the reaport of this resolucion and refusall not loked for, then when the judge published the sentence of his condemnacion, began to dispaire of other refuge; chiefly for that the awe and respect of authoritie of that villaine prevailed so much over the rest of the marchauntes and cytizens thear, that none other durste undertake the bargaine, seinge their maister usurer made difficultie to advaunce the value. Such wer the dispites of his fortune, and extreme termes which sinister fate, with the malice of the wicked, had brought him unto. Wherin, dismissing th' expectation of all succours, gave sentence of his owne life, and committed th' execution to the rigour of the lawe; resolving rather to quench th' insatiable thurst or

The covetous minde is never in quiet, according to the wordes of th' appostle.

gredye appetit of his covetous enemy by th' oblacion of his innocent life into th' andes of such unrighteous judges, then, in exchaunging the remeinder of his whole inheritance for so smal a tribute (insufficient, also, to satisfie the demaund of the fiske), to leave his sister in extreme penurie, without al meanes of necessarie sustentacion. Wherfore, reposing much for himself in th' innocencye of his cause at the handes of the highe judge (chiefly for that the natural course of his dayes stode at point to be abridged by the wickednes of other men) after hee had preferred certeine vehement invectives against the general malice of the worlde, with special exclamacion on the behalfe of his peculiar myshap, he desyred respite to examine his life in secret, and dispose for the health of his soule. Which resolution of death was furthwith imparted to the faire Angeliqua; who, besides whole rivers of teares distilling from her watery eyes with dollorous cryes in dolefull voyce, redoubled with an eccho of treble dule, entred into a mortall war wythe her garmentes and attyre of her head, neither forbearing to deschevel her crispy lockes and heare exceding the collor of amber, nor commit cruel execution upon the tender partes of her body. And giving free skope to the humor of her fury, she spared not to imprint with her nayles, uppon the precious complexion of her oriente face, a pityfull remembrance of the tragicall troble of her desolate brother, whome shee coulde not in any way perswade to a chaung or alteracion of purpose, althoughe she imployed herselfe and councell of her frendes to th' uttermoste. But I dare avouch thus muche on the behalf of the deare zeale shee beare hym, that, yf by the force and malice of the distresse he had gyven place to nature and dyed, she had not lyved to have revenged his wronge, nor lamented her owne desolacion. For the same affection whiche moved her to suche care of his life, woulde also have procured her to have bene his companion to the grave; whereby one tombe, at one instaunte, shold have served to shroode the ii bodies and last remaynder of the whole race and house of the Montanyns. And that which seamed to restore her dollorous passion with a freshe supply and increase of newe sorowe, was the heavie newes of diverse of her

God the highe judge.

DISCOURSE I

neare kynsmen touching the spedy approch of the extreme date and delay of the sentence diffinitive; which, as they had not onli indevored to differ yet som longer time, but also to purchase a moderation of the rigour; so, beyng no lesse frustrate in the one, then voyed of assuraunce or hope of the other, they sayed there rested nothing on their powers to performe or discharge the office of true frends on her behalf, saving to perswade her to consolacion, and to use patience in cases of adversitie, chiefly wher there appeares absolute dispaire of all remedie, and the sinister suggestion of malicious fortune hath suppressed al hope and expectation of delivery. Wherin, as an unfained witnes of their presente dollour they let fall certaine teares to accompanie the pitifull dule of her who, upon the reaport of theis last accurrauntes, forgat not to fyll the aire ful of hollowe sighes, with open exclamacion against the lawe of nature, that seamed so careles of her creatures as not only to leave them without armour or sufficent resistance against the ordinary assaultes of the world, but also to make them subject, by speciall destenie, to the sentence and dome of a most unrighteous and hard fortune. But albeit adversity (besides that she is subject to sondry sortes of calamitie) is also 'so quarellous of her one disposition, that, for the respect of one simple or peculiar wronge, she makes us to exclaime generally against all liberties and lawes of God and man; yet ought we so to checke that same humour of inordinat rage that mortifieth within us all regarde of dutie and reason, that we dispaire not in the goodnes of him, who, beynge the giver of all comfort and God of consolation, is more ready to dispose it on our behalfe, then we hable to deserve the gift of so greate a benefit'; and who, in the middes of the teares of this desolate ladye, beyng with the reste of her frends wholly resolved to endure the rigorous sentence of their fate, presented the catastrophe of the tragedy, with such an offer or meane of spedye delivery of the prisoner, that it did not only excede th' expectation of all men, but seamed also the worke of suche a wonderfull misterie, that no man was hable to imagin the devise, afore their eyes gave judgment of th' effecte. For the same day, aboute the nynth or tenth

hower of the evenyng, Anseamno Salymbyno, whome heretofore you have hearde to bee sore passioned with the love of Angelyqua, having spente certaine dayes of recreacion in the countrey, is now returned to Syenna; where, passyng by the gate of his ladye, he chaunced to heare a lamentable noyse of women bewailyng the misery of the Montanynes. Wherwith, pursewyng the brute with a more diligente eare, spyed at last, commyng out of the pallayes of Angelyqua, certain olde dames his nexte neighboures, all to bee sprent and died with the dew of sorowfull teares, as though they hadd then come from the funeral of some of their frendes. Of whom he enquired the cause of suche unacustumable dule, and whether and what new misfortune were happened of late to the house of the Montanyns. And being at larg resolved of that which you have hard by speciall reporte, went imediatlye to his chamber, where he began to discourse diversely of this soddaine chaunce; sometyme determining the deliverie of Charles for the only respect of his syster, whose good wil he thought he cold not purchase any waye so well as by the benefyt and pryce of so greate a frendshyppe; by and by hee accomped the death of her brother a moste necessarye meane to make him the maister of his desire over his sister. Wherin, after he had spente somtyme in secrete cogitacion, without any certeyne resolution notwithstandyng what to do, he seamed to aske open councel of himselfe in this sorte: 'What cause have I hereafter to dowte of the thing I chiefly desyer, seyng fortune seames to take more care of my contentement then I am hable to wishe or imagyn; undertaking (as it seames) to presente me wyth th' effecte of my busynes, whenne I leaste thoughte of any hope or liklihod of good successe? For by the death of the Montanyn, who is to be executed to morowe in publike as a rebell or heynous offendor of the state, I shal not only see the laste revenge of the most mortall enemyes of our house, but also live without feare hereafter to be molested by any that shal discend of hym: and, on the other syde, his death takes away al impedimentes offering either to stay or hinder me from enjoying of her whom I love so dearely. For her brother being deade and his goodes and

Salymbyno debateth with himself touching the deliverye of his ennemie.

DISCOURSE I

livinge confiscat to the state, what stay or support hath she, if not in her beauty, and love of some honest gentleman; who, takyng compasion of the losse of so rare an ornament and worke of nature, may entertaine her for his pleasure, untill the glasse of so brikle a gyfte dekay with his delyte in her companye, and then, for the respecte of pytye, to bestow her in mariage with some compotent porcion? But what Salymbyno? Shal the offer of any unseamely reveng prevaile above that respect and duty thou art borne to beare and owe unto true vertue? Or wilt thou so much abuse the former glory of thy auncestors and presente renowne of thyselfe with an acte, no lesse detestable afore God, then hatefull to the eares of all degrees of honestye? And wilt thou thus deceave th' expectation of thy frendes, and leave them in continual reproche to the posteritye of all ages, with a note of suche infamye that tyme herselfe can skarce race out of the remembrance of man? If all theis lacke authoritie to diswade the, let only the respect and awe of vertue with remorce of conscience, kepe the frome committing so hainous an offence. For to what other end have the auncients put a diffrence betwene the gentlemen and creatures of baser condition, but that, in exposyng fruites of cyvill courtesye, wee should also stryve to make ourselves noble, and excede theim in th' imitacion of true vertue? And as it is far from the office of a noble hart to thunder reveng upon such as are not hable to resyst thy power, so there can be no greater argument or proffe of true magnanimytie then, in buryenge the desyer of vengeaunce in a tombe of eternall oblivion, to expose moste fruites of compassion, where there appeares greate cause to extende the uttermost of rigour, and where on th' adverse partie, is leaste exspecte or hope of succoure. For how canne a man lay a more sewer foundation of perpetuall glorye, then in correctinge the humoure of hys fowle appetite and conquerynge the unbridled affections of the wilful mind, to make them bound unto the by thy benefyts, who wer in despaire to receive any pleasure at thy hands? The whiche declaration of true vertue, lyke as it happeneth so seldom amongest men now a dayes, that we may verayc well terme it a thinge excedinge

the common course and order of nature; so he that wyll chalenge the title of true nobilitie, and seame to excel the rest in th' appeale of perfect honor, muste prefer in publike suche absolute effects of hys worthynes and vertue, as the same may justlye appeare meritorious of an immortal memory in the successe of al future ages. The chiefest pointes of so large commendacion, which so many recordes of antiquitye do attribute unto the greate Dictatoure Cesar, consiste more in the clemencye hee used to his ennemies, being vanquished and under the awe of hys mercye, then in the mortall and manye battailes he fought agaynst the valiaunte Galles and Britons, or subduing the renowned Pompey. The great Alexander deserved no lesse honor for the pytie and curtesie hee used towardes Sysigambis, the mother of Darius, with other desolate ladyes whyche hee tooke prysoners in the battaile foughte at Arobella, thenne fame in the conqueste of the kynge and contreye of Percia and Media: and at the death of the wyfe of Darius in hys camppe, he let fal no lesse effucion of teares then if hee had bene presente at the buriall of Olympias, his naturall mother. Neyther coulde hee have made so greate a conqueste of the whole easte worlde wyth hys small crewe and companye of Macedonians, if he had not subdued more contreys by clemencye thenne force of armes. Besydes, who is ignorante of the late curtesye of Don Roderico Vivano of Spayne, who, all bee it, myghte have revenged th' infydelytye of Don Pietro thenne kyng of Aragon (for that hee wente abowte to ympeshe his expedicion agaynst the Sarazins) being then at Granado, did not only forbeare to punish hym or put hym to ransom, but also, being his prisoner by order and lawe of armes, dismissed him into his contreye with no lesse honor then belonged to his estate, withoute any exaction of his person or realme. Wherin, for my parte, the more I reave in the rariety of their noble vertues, so muche the more oughte I to increase my indevor in th' ymitacion of the like examples. And, of the crontrary, what greate cause have I to preferre a continuation of the grudge ended alredye by warre; or why shoulde I sturre up eftesones a freshe remembrance of the faulte alredye forgeven? What injury have they don to me

Yt is more easye to conquer by clemencie then by crueltie.

DISCOURSE I

or mine, which was not retorned unto them without intrest of double revenge? Admit their predecessours have bene ennemies to my house: have they not borne a more harde penance then the greatnes of their offence deserved? What cause have I then to renew the alarum of their miserie; or why stay I to succoure their desolate state in some satisfaction of the injuries they have received by me and mine? Besides, the wrathe of God accordyng to the wordes of the Apostle, is alwaies hanginge over the heades of suche as seame to take pleasure in the affliction of their neighbour, rejoyce in the misfortune or misery of another. If all theis lacke sufficient force to mortifie the remembrance of auncient malice within me, and, in exposing (contrarie to the expectation and opinion of the world) a wonderful example of vertue, to move me to releve his distresse that dispaireth of all succour, and reclaim by liberalitie the friendshipe of him, who, if he ever offended, is alredye pardoned, like as also if his innocency have bene abused by me and mine—my conscience calleth me to a remorce, in rendring satisfaction in so nedeful a time. Yet am I drawen by a band of further dutye, and incensed by a somaunce or special instigacion of the honor and service which my harte hath alredye vowed on the behalfe of her whose beauty and vertue deserves a greater meede then the uttermost that I can do, eyther for the contentement of her, or consolation of her brother. For, like as ther is no man (onlesse he bee utterlye devested from the gyfte of humanitye) being passioned with equall affection, and somoned by semblable desire to doo some notable service to my deare Angeliqua, as I am, that woulde not racke hys power to the highest pyn, to take awaye the chiefe causes of her dolefull teares, and restore her to a spedie contentment convenient for her merite; so, in lovinge her, I muste also imbrace suche as shee accomptes and (by good righte) are moste deare unto her. And, if I will make a declaration of the true zeale I beare her, why do I staie to expose it in so nedefull a time, and on the behalfe of him whome shee loveth no lesse then herselfe, attending even now the fatall stroake of the morderinge sworde for a tryfflinge due of a thousande florentes? And why shoulde I doubte to make it

knowen in publike that only the force of love hathe made me trybutary to the faire Angeliqua? For seinge that kinges, and the greateste monarkes of the worlde, do drawe under the yoke of his awe, it is not for me to eschewe that by speciall pryviledge, whiche is incidente to all men by nature: neyther ought I herein to refuce the offer of my destenie, nor straungers to enter into muche marvaile, if I (being of the mettall of other men, and subject to no lesse impression and passions of mynde then the reste) do make presente dedication of my harte and service to her, whose vertue I am sewer is so invincible agaynst all adversitie, that neyther necessitie, nor the moste extreme message that fortune can send her, is hable to make her forfeyte the leaste pointe of her honestie, or forgette the renowme of the genelogie wherof she is discended. Wherin, as honest love hath sturred up this mocion in me with composicion to expose imediatlye the frutes and effects of semblable vertue; so the spedye delyverye of thy brother (oh! Angelyqua) shal argue sufficientlye to all men, that it is only the regarde of thy beawtie that hath paied the price of his raunsem, and removed frome his tender legges the heavye yrons whiche the penaunce of harde imprisonemente had unjustlye enjoyned unto him: tryumphinge, also, with this increase of further glorye, that onlye the regardes and glauncis of thy glisteringe eyes have made a breach into the harte whiche earste hathe defyed the malice and uttermoste of all force, and made hym bowe of his owne kinde that never colde bee broughte to bende or stowpe to any of what degree or condition so ever they were. And thou, Seigneur Charles, for thy parte, hast this daye gained so assured and perfecte a frende, that, if thou wilt confirme the league by franke consente, th'amytie shall not be onlye mutuall betwene us till deathe discharge the same by seperation of oure bodies, but also remeyne no lesse indissoluble to the posterytie and succession of bothe oure races for ever. And as in the firste worke of this newe societie, I will not only stryve to excede the in showe of perfecte frendeshippe, but also make the waye open, by my example, to all degrees of nobilitie to attaine to the like honour by semblable vertue; so I pro-

DISCOURSE I

DISCOURSE I

nounce heare a further confirmation on my parte, with protestation, by the faythe and lyfe of a gentleman, to embrace the and thy frendes with no lesse affection then my-selfe, and persecute thy enemyes with no lesse mortalitie then if they had conspired and put in use the destruction of the noble house of Salymbyno.' Wherwith, seinge the necessitie of the tyme craved rather an expedition of diligence then longer discourse or deliberation, hee tooke a bagge of a thousande duckattes, and went ymediatly to the Deputie Receavor of peynall forfeytures of the state of Syenna, whom hee founde perusinge certaine accomptes in his stodie. And after he hadde taken him the bagge, with addition that there was the whole demaunde due to Don Charles Montanyn, he commaunded to give an acquitance withe his writte of delyvery from th' instante. But tellinge the contentes of the bagge he founde a surplusage of the some due by the prysoner; which, as he offred to restore, so the other did not onlye refuce to take it, but also woulde not departe the place till he had despatched one of his people to the maister of the jayle; who, perceiving a tender of the money, wythdrewe the accion, and sent to fetch the prisoner out of his dongion and darke cabynet, clogged with heavye shackels and clinkinge yrons. Charles hearinge a noyse of bownsinge at doarres and opening of rustie lockes, imagined it had bene the cominge of some ghostlie father to heare his shryft and laste confession; and that the senatte (in respecte of the honour and estimation of his house) had graunted him the priveledge of a secrete execution within the prison, for avoydinge the publike shame whiche comonlye attendes the miserye of such as declare their laste testament uppon the skaffolde, in the gaze of all the worlde. And havinge alredye examyned his conscience accordinge to the shortnes of his leasure, so farfurthe as he seamed only to attende the fatall hower, desyred God eftsones to strengthen him with hys grace, not leavinge him wythout assistance in his journeye and passage so perillous; where oftentymes the moste assured, do not only waver, but utterly declyne, if they be not supported by his speciall favor. In the ende of which secret meditacion, he comended unto his goodnes the lyfe of his

deare syster; desiering, with humble teares, in a speciall peticion and last requeste, to be protector, and defende her alwayes from all assaltes and offers of infamie or dishonour. Being thus brought into the hal of the jaylor, the tormentours or officers of the prison began to knocke of the boltes from his legges, and present hym besydes (in show of countenance) rather with arguments of consolation then cause of freshe disquiet or distruste of delyverie. Which kinde of curtesy, not loked for, stirred uppe in his troubled minde a soddaine hope or expectation of good fortune, with an absolute assuraunce, almoste, of that which affore he durste never ymagine and muche lesse accompte to come to passe. Wherof, notwithstandinge, the effecte appeared at th'instante. For the jaylor, showinge him his letters of deliverie, tolde hym it was in his power to use the benefytte of hys former lybertie. 'For,' saythe hee, 'the lawe is choked and fullye aunswered for her due, and I satysfyed to the uttermoste of the charges and fees of youre imprisonmente: desyeringe you, sir, if you have founde worse entreatie att my handes thenne I see youre offence hathe deserved, to consider the charge of my office, and to impute it rather to the straite comission enjoyned mee by the senatt, then any desyer of myselfe to deale with you in other sorte then the bond and respecte of the dutifull zeale I beare you dothe require.'

DISCOURSE I

Here is to be noted a wonderfull difference in the casualties accidentall to man; and that the chaunges and alterations in love be of a contrary disposition to the reste of the passions that trouble the minde. Neyther nede we doubt by the authoritie of this example, no lesse credible then of great admiracion, but love is a certaine vertue of itself, seinge it workes th'effect and exposeth suche frutes as seame to resemble rather the opperacion of a devine miracle then the suggestion of our fraile fancye. For howe had this Salymbyno redemed so frelye, and in a tyme of such nede, the carefull Charles (beinge firmely confirmed in mortall grudge as you have harde) if the verye vertue, whiche we are not hable to tearme by a proper name in love, had not broken, by force of a zealous affection, the angrie inclinacion of his nature, and converted the humour of his auncient

DISCOURSE I

wrath into a compassion exceding the imagination of manne. And as it is an ordenarye argument of humanytie to give succours to suche as neyther have deserved any thinge of us, and muche lesse wee never knewe nor sawe; because nature herselfe dothe somon us all to be thankefull to such as resemble ourselves in condition or callinge; so, that vertue deserveth treble comendation, whiche, excedinge as it were th' authoritie of nature, doth force in us suche an inclynation, whiche dothe not only mortefye in our hartes the obstinat humor norished of long continuance, but makes us plyable to the thinges which we colde not so much as admitte afore into our cogitacions, and much lesse performe by any perswacion of the worlde. Wherof you maye note a familiar experience in the disposition of this Salymbyn; who suffred himselfe to be more overcome wyth the bewtie, vertue, and seamelye behavior of Angeliqua then with any humilitie or importunate sute of her brother, althoughe hee hadde layen prostrate a thousande tymes afore his knee. And what hart is tempered with the mettal of such induracion that is not mollified and made tractable by the regardes of so rare a misterie as the exquisite beautye of this Syennoyse? Or who wil not slacke the raine of his loftie stomacke, and stoupe to the somance of suche a paragon; humblynge himselfe withall every waye, to get the good will of her that gave place to no creature in the worlde for all perfections of God and nature? Neyther is there any reason at all to charge hym with imputacion of foly that indevoureth to honor and imbrace in his hart the beautye and other giftes of so vertuous a ladye; nor his travaile meritorious of other name, then the title of honest exercise, who, addinge an exact diligence to his dutifull zeale and service in the pursute of her whose vertues procure his affection, hathe his harte armed onelye with an upright meanyng of sincere integritye, and the desier of his minde tendyng to none other ende then a consomation of an honest and lawfull request. But, for the contrary, of this honest societie I accompte hym not worthie to have the ayre breath upon hym, who, practisinge onely to seduce and corrupte the chastetye of honest dames, hath no respect to the vertue

of honest and true love; but, sekyng only to satisfy the appetit of his sensual luste, doth embrace the exterior partes of a woman, and commendes simplye the tree charged with leaves, without regardyng the frut which makes it worthie of commendacion and fame. Herewith, it can not be muche from our purpose, to enterlarde this digression with the authoritie of a brief note whiche I founde written in a Frenche booke, on the behalfe of the sinceritye which ought to appeare in women; comparinge the younge ladye bearynge yet the name of a mayde to the glisterynge flower in the pleasaunt springe, untill, by her constancie and chaste behavior, subduing utterlie the wanton mocions of the fleshe, she expose to the worlde the precious fruites derived of so great a vertue, and give absolute experience of her undoubted pudicitie. 'For other wayes' (saith he) 'she is in no other degree for worthie renowme then the young soldiour, whose contenaunce, albeit, argueth the corage of his hart, yet his capteine hath no reason to gyve judgement of his valiauntnes, nor cause to reapose muche credit in him in any expedition or exploite againste th' enemye, tyll he see an approved effect in dede of that which he promiseth so largely by his outward apparance: but when he fyndeth an absolute confirmation of the exterior likelihodes by the inward vertu and valyauntnes of the mynd, it is then that he doth not only embrase hym, but preferreth hym afore the reste as a speciall pattorne to ymitate his vertues.' Even so, besides that the croune of immortal glorye attendes youe ladyes, who, by withstandynge th' assaultes and importunities of the fleshe, do give to your selfe the true title of honest women, not by force or awe of constraint, but by the valyaunt resistance of your most chaste and invincible hart; yet also, the monument of your vertues being graved in pillors of eternitie, and advaunced to the height of the highist theatrey in the worlde, shal remaine as a mirroer or worthy spectacle, to procure all posterities, not onelye to treade the pathe of semblable vertues, but also to yelde you a continuall adoracion after your death by the remembraunce and viewe of your chaste and vertuous life. Wherewith, wishyng you all no lesse desier to lyve wel, then the most of

DISCOURSE I

you are gredy of glory, I leave you to the remorce of your owne consciences, and presentes you here withe the remeinder of my promisse touchyng the sequele of Charles Montanyn; who, being out of prison as you have harde, repaired immediatly to his house, with intent to comfort her whom he knewe to be in greater dollour and distresse, and as nedeful of consolacion as himselfe seamed desirous of repose, being so long forewatched in a filthy prison. And knocking at the gates of his pallais, the mayd that opened the dore, and saw it was her maister, mounted, with more speed then an ordinarie pase, and tolde Angeliqua the deliverye and approche of her brother. Wherunto, what addicion or protestation her mayd seamed to make, her troubled mynde wolde give no credit (suche great impossibilitie do wee accompte in the execution of those thinges whiche we chiefly desier), but, seaminge no lesse amazed with the misterie then Saint Peter being soddainly taken furth of the prison of Herode by the Aungel, stoode as thoughe she had bene dreaming of the dissolution of the worlde, without apparance of sence or argument of lyvely mocion in any part of her, til the presence of her brother (being now in her chamber) seamed to breath in her an ayre of fresh consolation and lyfe: and, dismissing from th'instant the misterie of her domme traunce, received eftsones her former use and libertie of senses. Wherwith, converting her dolorous regardes and teares of auncient dule into a passion of such sodain gladnes, that, being at the point to congratulat his coming with words, she felt a second impediment of spech by the operation of present joye which she toke in beholding his face, that she fel down at his fete, embrassing and kissyng his knees with no lesse signes and shewe of a gladsome mynde then if by som miracle he had bene raised from death to life. Wherewith, certaine ladies, her kynswomen, assistinge her dolorous distresse, having restored her laste traunce, and doubtyng eftsones to fal into the like passion, sent for their husbandes, with other the frends of Montanyno, as wel to rejoyce his happie delivery, and so to avoyde al occasions of further traunces in his sister, as also to excuse their negligence in not assisting his late miserie. But

Charles, dissimuling that which he thought of their dis- DISCOURSE
courtesie towardes himself, gave them chief thankes for their I
frendship in comforting his syster, which he construed to as great an honor and argument of good wil as if they had imployed it on the behalf of himself. Wherwith he dismissed them, devining notwithstanding what he shold be that had made so large declaration of so great a vertu, and sorowful without measure that he knew him not, to th'ende he might not onely requite so rare a courtesie, but also excede him in liberalitie by a franke offer of himself and all that he hath within the world. He seamed not so ignoraunt of th'author of so great a benefit as his syster in treble doubte on the same behalf; persuading herself, notwithstanding, that the feare of death had made him conveigh a secret sale of his landes in the contrey to him which first broked it; and that this doubte which seamed to trouble hym was onely a darke vaile to conceile the trothe and kepe it from her knowledge; or rather his longe imprisonment, with disquiet of minde during his trouble, had stalled his sences, and made him rave in that sorte. Wherin she was in equall doubte of them al, till he resolved her to the contrary. Wherewith, departing for that night, they repaired to their several chambers, where the Montanyn had more desier of slepe then hable to admit any rest: for that he spent al that night in contemplation and contrarietie of thoughtes; making an assemblie in his minde of every shape and figure of such his frends as he was hable to imagin to be the workers or cause of so great a benefit, somtime preferring one, somtime presenting an other, without touching, notwithstanding the perfect whit, or naming him that justely had deserved the meede of so great a merite, and to whome he acknowledged no lesse bonde of dutie then to them that Parentes.
were the first causers of his comming into this worlde. Wherein, passing that night the pictures of a thousand men, his bed seamed to serve him as a wyde and large plaine, or some rowmey alley, or close arbor within a thicke wood, to rol up and downe, making his discourse with sondry sortes of diverse ymaginations, until the discoverynge of the redde globe, or forronner of the day, somoned Apollo to harnesse

DISCOURSE I

his horse, and begin his course over our Hemisphere: when he rise, and wente to the officer of the fiske, of whome he demaunded to know what he was that discharged the debte of his late forfeyture. 'He whom you can skarcely ymagin' (saith the receavour) 'hath exceded all your frends firme and faithfull zeale towards you: to whom I have delivered the releace of your imprisonment, but not the acquitaunce of the money, because here is an overplus which I have here to tender unto you with your general discharge.' Where-with Charles, no lesse moved against him for the offer of the money, then greved with the curious delay he seamed to use in disclosing the name of so great a frend, requested him eftesones to cut his suspense, and make hym know the man to whom he was so much bounde. 'The rare vertue and curtesie of Anseamo Salymbino' (saith he) 'hath preferred cause of perpetual shame to al your frendes and allies, and opened you the waye, not onelye to be equall, but excede hym in semblable merit.' Wherewith he departed with an infynity of conceiptes and constructions of the courtesie of his enemye: and beynge at his house in a secrete gallerye, voyde from all companye or occasion of disturbance, began to discourse diversely of th' accident; but chiefly what shoulde sturre up such generositie, with inexspectable humanitie, in hym, who, with his parentes, and all the power he mighte make, had bene the onely and mortall scourges of his whole house. At last, starting up, as it were, out of a dead sleape, or newly delyvered from the misterie of som sodaine qualme, began to remember some glees of frendshy, which he had heretofore noted in Salimbino on the behalfe of his syster: which appeared chiefly in the often pale-walkes and purmenades he made by the gate of hys pallais; where, yf by chaunce his eyes encountred with the viewe of Angeliqua, he forgot not to preferre a reverence and salutacion, rather of an affectioned hart then a minde charged with grudge or any kinde of enymitie. Wheruppon, he resolved immediatly, that the onelye beautye of his syster did pleade for his lyfe, and purchase his deliverye; concludyng withall in his mind, that, as the noble hart is soonest enclined to love, so, when true affection hath

The noble harte soonest inclined to love.

once made a breacke into the intralles of the valyant and princely minde, it is impossible but she shoulde expose marvelous effectes and fruites of honest vertue. Like as also, the ymp derived of noble kinde, and discended of the progenie of renowmed predecessours, can not so maske or cover his norriture and education, but the vertue of the minde wil advaunce herselfe in the countenance, with shew of nobilitie in the face, and preferre a facilitie in that whiche the voice of the worlde hath not onelye judged impossible, but also absolutely persuaded that he wold never be broughte to do it, eyther of free consent or force of any awe or allurementes. Wherin, for his parte, because he would neyther be surmounted in honestie, nor noted of any spot of ingratitude, determined to revenge the good tourne he had received with suche prodigall recompense, that he woulde seame no lesse liberall in retorning th' intereste of the benefit receyved then the other treble meritorious for th' example of soo rare a vertue. Wherefore, havinge nothinge worthy to present the frendshipp of Salimbino but himselfe and his sister, determined to impart his present resolution with the fayre Angeliqua; and after dispose themselves, by mutuall assent, to make a tender and franke offer of that whych was in theym, to be imployed on the behalfe of him and his as he lyste to ymagine the occasion. Wherin, because he was now in the contrey, without intent to retourne to the citie till the expiracion of some iiij or v dayes, Charles, fynding hys conscience heavelye charged with a debte on his behalfe, thought to practise for hym in his absence, as wel as he was myndefull of his late misfortune; and therupon procured his syster into a gardein, far from anye haunte or companye to troble them, where he brake with her in this sort:—

Montanyno seketh to requit the good torne of his enemye.

'Amongest all the chaunges and conversions of mortall affaires (my deare syster) there is none a more familiar precedent of the malice of fortune then he that is touched with diversitie of evils, nor anye so greate a paterne or example of her mobitie as they that fynde often chaunge of estate. And yet, for all that, we ought not to suffer any adversitie to deminishe the vertue and constancie of the mind; neyther is it our part to geve so grevous a sentence

DISCOURSE I

Fortune not to be holden against her wil, and God is bound to no time.

of the state of mans mortalitie, as eyther to denie mercie to such as be in misery, or dispair of compassion whenne our selves be touched with affliction; seing that, as thinges mortall are full of chaunge, and no man hath perpetuall felicitie, so there is no man certaine of any thinge that he hath; and God is bound to no time; and fortune being slipperie of herselfe, and not hable to be holden againste her will, dothe never give so great felicitie, but she enjoyneth a double penaunce with trouble of treble annoy in respect of the benefyt. And besides, he that falleth from the uttermost spray, or height, of the highest tree, findeth lesse ease and more daunger, then suche as fele themselves taken from the lowe and shallow braunches, supported upon the firme earth. All which I prefer unto you in this place, as wel by a peculyar instigacion and remorce of mynde, restoring a newe remembrance of the noble condicion of our auncestors, the auncient glory of our race, and former renowne of the house of Montanyno, as also to sturre up in us both a freshe supplie of sorowful teares on the behalfe of the late depopulation and utter ruine of the same. Wherin, for my parte, as often as I beholde the riche seates and stately buildings somtime the resident and ordinarie places of abode of our fathers and grandfathers; when my desolate eyes, glaunsinge upon divers corners of this cytie, do fede upon the viewe of sondrye skutchions and pendels of our armes, bearinge a special marke or badge of th'antiquitie of our famuly; or that in the cathedral churches, or chiefe temples of this cytie, I peruse the inscription of so manye statelye tombes and perpetuall monumentes of marble, shrowdyng the bodies of so many noble knightes and notable captaines discended of the lyne of Montanyno; but chieflye as often as I put my foote within the entrey of this pallais the very reste and last remeinder of them whose authoritie, onely hath earst governed the state of this common welth, —I fele myselfe so passioned with inward grefe, and my hart within distillinge drops of blodd on the behalfe of so great a desaster, that I wishe, more often then I am harde, to be taken awaye from the dolourous regarde of suche wretched desolation, to th'ende that I alon mighte not live as the od

relike or uttermost reste of our subverted house. And albeit, we may chalenge the first place in the beadrol of unhappy wretches, seinge our fortune hath exchaunged our auncient felicitie for a present lyfe of extreme miserye, yet, yf there be anye cause of consolation in adversitie, we have raison to joye in the condition of our state; chefly for that we are not justely to be charged with imputacion of evil or dishonest trade any waie; and that, notwithstanding the raging malice of our fortune, with the force of povertie pinchynge extremely, the discourse of our lyves hath so confirmed the generositie of our auncestors, that we kepe the consent of al voices to be nothing inferior to the best of them in any respect of vertue or showe of true nobilitie. For I have alwaie indevored to observe this one rule and discipline of the renowmed Emperour and Captaine, Marcus Anthonius; who persuadeth, that, as the heyght of estate ought not to alter the goodnes of nature, so the frowarde disposition of fortune oughte not to take awaye or diminishe the constancie of the mynde; with this addicion, that he beareth her malice best that hydes his miserye moste. Besides, thus muche dare I advouche of myselfe, that as I was never presented with the offer of any good tourne, whiche I have not thankefullie requited to th' uttermoste; so I have not bene a nigarde of anye thinge I have on the nedefull behalfe of my frende or other companion, detestynge alwayes that anye jote of ingratitude shold staine the reputation wherin I have lyved hytherunto. For, as amongest a nomber of vices in men nowe a dayes, the note of unthankfulnes is no lesse detestable then any of the reste; so, for my parte, I wishe the rigour of th' Athenyans lawe upon hym who seames eyther forgetfull of the benefyt passed, or unthankefull to the frendship of hym that brought succours to his necessitie when he dispaired of relief. Wherin (my deare sister) albeit you maye happelye imagine the cause of this longe circunstaunce, yet can you give no certeine judgement of the ende or conclusion, nor divine ryghtely the meanynge of the misterye whiche I purpose to reveale unto you. The threatnynge perill whiche earste hovered to cut in sonder the fyllet of my lyfe, is of so late a tyme that

Height of estate ought not to alter the goodnes of nature.

The Athenians punished unthankfulnes by death.

DISCOURSE I

I am sewer youre minde hath not yet dismissed the remembraunce of so fearefull a tragedye; neyther have you forgotten, I knowe, howe (as it were by speciall miracle) I was boughte out of the handes of the executioner of justice, and redemed from the rigorus sentence of the partiall senatt; without th' assistance of any my parentes or alyes, by eyther simple offer of worde or effect. Wherein, as I am warned by this experience, not onelye to putt small confidence in anye of my kinsmen hereafter, but also to reappose no assurance at all in their flatteringe show of fained face, so I have tasted of so great a pleasure at the handes of hym who never deserved well of mee—nor I cause to ymagyne any one droppe of humanitye in hym on my behalfe—that, yf I do ryght to his vertue, I have reason to admitt hym not onlye amonge the felowshippe, but also the firste and chiefe of my deare frendes. For, beinge pressed so muche wyth the iniquitie of the tyme, wyth freshe assaltes of newe afflictions, and forsaken with all of my nearest frendes, I had reason to ymagyne, and cause to feare, that th' only malice of oure mortall enemyes (for the extirpation of the whole stocke and roote of oure race) had bene the workers of my laste trouble and daunger of deathe. But (good syster) in this distruste, I have abused the vertue of our late adversary, deservynge to indure pennance for entringe into conceites of conspiracye agaynste hym whose late benefyte (excedinge the ymaginacion of all men) hath made me bounde to honor the remembrance of his name with a debte of dutie, so longe as nature shall phan in mee the breathe of lyfe. For in place where I feared most daunger, I founde most savetie; and where I expected least sewertye, I encowntred moste assurance. And that hande, whiche I attended only to give the fatal blowe of my destruction, hath not only removed all occasions or offers of present perill, but become the chiefest pillor and proppe of mine honour and lyfe hereafter. Wherin, because you shal be partaker of the playnnesse of my tale, as wel as you have used patience in the hearinge of the circumstance, yt is Anseamo Salymbyno, the son and heir of our aunciente persecutours, who hath made so manyfeste a declaration of his affected zeale towardes

our howse, that, in takinge your brother owte of the handes of th' unrighteous senate, and present daunger of perentorye destruction, he hath seamed so lavishe of his liberal mynde that, in place of vii C florentes, he hath paide a thousande duckattes, for the ransom of hym who judged hym the moste crewell enemye of the worlde. What argumente of noble harte is this, or howe seldom dothe a man encounter suche rare frutes of vertues? Frendes, knitt together by a speciall league of amytie or mutual vowe of frendeshippe, do oftetymes make the worlde wonder of the sondry frutes and effectes of constancie which appeareth betwene theime: but where the mortall enemie, beinge neyther reconciled, nor required nor demaundinge any assuraunce for the pleasure he dothe, paieth not only the debte of his adversarye, but restoreth his state when he is at pointe to performe the laste of his fatal somaunce, I thinke it excedes all the consideration of suche as use to discourse uppon the doinges of menne. I knowe not what title to geve to the acte of Salymbyno, nor howe to tearme this his curtesye, yf not that his doinges deserve a better meede thenne the renowne of Daymon and Pithias, or other moste loyall frendes, whome the writters doo favor wyth suche surnames of glorye. But as I am a chiefe witnes of hys vertue; so the example of hys presente honestie hathe sturred uppe suche an affected humor wythin me, that, eyther I wyll dye in th' indevor, or els I wyl be equall, yf not hable to excede hym, in the retourne hys liberalitie. Wherein, beinge justelye bounde to engage the beste parte in me for the recompense of that good torne which gave increase to my lyfe, I am to crave a speciall assistance of you (syster) for the complotte of the devise whiche I have alreadye ymagyned, and fullye resolved to performe; to th' end I maye bee onelye bounde to you for the acquitaunce of the liberalytye of Salimbino, by whose helpe, you, that earste lamented the losse of libertye and lyfe of youre brother, maye nowe congratulate hys healthe and happye delyverye.' Where wyth the faire Angeliqua, fully resolved by this laste report of her brother, that it was Salembino whyche hadde surmounted all her parentes and frendes in the delyverye of her onelye comfort, and consolacion of their whole howse, made a frank

DISCOURSE I

The answer of Angelyqua to her brother.

promyse of her ayde in this sorte:—'Like as' (saith she) 'I was never hable to ymagyne that your delyvery was wrought by so rare a meane, nor that our enemyes (dissolvinge the remembraunce of aunciente quarrell) wolde retire to a care and conservation of the healthe and lyfe of the Montanyns; even so, I thinke youre debte is the greater by the awthoritie of him that hathe done the benefyte; and more worthye of ample consideracion thenne if the good torne hadde bene don by any of your parentes and allies. For thymitacion of a vertue oughte to excede the example of the awthor, chieflye wher th' occasion is deryved of suche an unlikelihod that the compasse of brayne seames insufficiente to ymagine so verteous an acte. Wherin, for my parte, if I were as hable as I am willinge, his curtesye shoulde bee retorned at soo large an intreste, that hymselfe shoulde thinke his benefyt nothinge in respecte of the recompence, and the worlde to witnes the generositie of the Montanyns. But havynge no waye th' assistance of fortune, to presente him with any thinge that may ballance with the merite of hys curtesye, and beinge besides a maide withoute accesse to his house, by reason of the smal hawnte I use with the ladyes his kinswomenne, I can do no more but yelde honoure to hys vertue wythe secrete thankes in my harte, wythe acknowledginge the debte untill wee bee hable to discharge it wyth equall recompense. Albeit (brother) if you have devised the meane wherin you accompte mee necessarye to be ymploied, doubte not of mee in anye respecte, soo that myne honoure onely bee not distressed.'

'Amongest ann infinitte discourses appearynge severallye in my unquiette mynde' (saythe hee) 'I canne not reste uppon anye likelye cause or meane to worke th' effecte of so rare a curtesye in thys gentlemanne on my behalfe, nor to procure hym in soo soddayne a momente to breake the bonde of aunciente grudge, and to converte his naturall hate into a frendeshippe withoute a seconde or comparison, if it be not the fyer of a covert love, kindled of longe time within the tender parts of his intrails, and suppressed with a wonderfull greife to himself, til, now that, encountringe so conveniente an occasion to sette abroache the vessell of his

burninge desier, withe meane to evente the flame that wyll no longer smother but bulke out into open show, he makes open declaracion of that whiche he can no longer conceile. Ah! wonderfull force and vertue in love! who hath power to converte the minde oppressed with passion of collor into a disposition tractable beyond all expectacion, and in one momente to chaunge that wherein all men judged an ympossybylitie of convercion. It is only thy bewtie, Angelyqua, with respect of other thy perfections, whiche have transformed our late enemye into the parson of a perfecte frende. It is the generall fame of thy honest and verteous life that hath sommoned Salymbyno to deliver thy miserable brother, abandoned of all his frendes and in dispaire of any good fortune. Oh! noble gentleman and harte of a kinge! lackinge no kinde of magnanymitie, what meanes, alas! have I to approche that honest liberalitie, wherunto thou haste bounde me by so sewer obligacion? I lyve to serve the, and am ready to dye to do the pleasure. Mine honor is reserved to be ymploied by the, and my goodes and lyvinge attende thy sommonce, to dispose of them at thy pleasure. Thow haste, also, made suche a stealthe of my harte that onely death is hable to redeme it. What is there thenne remaininge, but that you, Angeliqua, remove incontynent the vaile of al superstición and unseamely crueltie, in disposinge thyselfe to be thankefull to hym who hath won thy good will by the wager and warranty of verteous love; and who, as a fyrste earneste penny of his service and dutye towardes the, dyd presente a thousande ducckettes for the raunsome of myne honour and lyfe: whyche, if they remeyne of equall care unto the nowe as th'abundance of thy late teares with dollorus regardes did earste argue to all the worlde (whereof also thou gaveste a chiefe declaration in thy free consente to sel mine inheritance for the redemption of my thraldom) sticke not to dispose thyselfe now so frankely on my behalfe, that I maye revenge the favor whiche Salymbino hath don me for the respect of thy love, with a present no lesse precious and rare then his acte is justely meritorious of perpetuall fame in all ages? And as hee refuced not turne up the bottom of his coffers to raunsome

Love hath power to worke a facilitie in that whiche all men thinke ympossible.

DISCOURSE I

my libertie; so, lackinge the consente of equal fortune to retorne his curtesye with semblable payment, lett us make a present of your bewtie; whiche I am sewer he wil not abuse any waye, consydering that he wantes no furniture of vertue whiche is necessarie for the adorninge of a noble harte. Which, as it is al the meane I have to make a counter change of his benefytt and bringe me out of debt with him whose money lyeth in pawne for the libertie of my life; so, I beseche you, good sister, consider the justice of my requeste, and pronownce a resolucion in suche sorte as, requitinge that whiche is due to him, I maye yelde you alone al homage, and holde my life only of you. But if your aunswere putt me eyther in doubte or dispaire of this meane to make even with so true a creditor, assure yourselfe I wil rather abandon both citye and countrey, and disclaime the company of al my frends, then lyve amongest you with the name of an unthankeful parson, or be pointed at of the worlde not to requite so great a good torne as the deliverie and savinge of my life. Wherefore, seinge that in you alone consistes the whole reappose of your desolate brother, determine eyther his abode and companye with you for ever, or els his departure, within these thre daies, to wast the remeinder of his wretched life in continual wander in forreine soiles, with absolute intente never to sette foote within any parte of Italy hereafter.' Wherewith, the pore Angeliqua became no lesse astonied and voyede of sence then if she had bene of a soddayn assailed with an apoplexie. Albeit, the passion of her mynde, quarrellinge so longe within that her stomake seamed to pant as it were the breathe of ii litle bellowes upon a fordge, brake out at laste by a watery vent at her eyes, distillinge whole rivers of teares, and restored her to the use of her speche, which she uttered to her brother in this sorte:—'I have often rede,' saithe shee, 'that it is easye for an innocente to fynde wordes to speake, and verye harde for a man in myserie to kepe a temperaunce in his tale; but I doubte I shall finde, by a present experience of myselfe, that the defence of a prisoner is not only superfluous but also hatefull, seaminge rather to reprove then enforme the judge. Wherein I am the rather perswaded

(my deare brother) for that the tearmes of thy laste requeste, dependinge upon yssues of extremeties, do argue bothe a justice to performe thy desyer, and an incyvilitie in the in makinge so unreasonable a demaunde; the one, challenginge a consente in me by th'ympression of nature and bonde of dutifull zeale on my behalf towardes the; the other chargинge the wyth iniquitie for the respecte whiche thou wouldest have me to do. But, seinge everye requeste craveth a retorne of aunswere, and the greater qualytie or condition the cause is of, the greater delyberacion oughte wee to use—chiefelye where it ymportes eyther th'absolute breache or firme confirmation of the league of lyneall consanguynitie—I beseche you graunte no lesse patience to the wordes of my replie then I have bene contented to favor your vehement protestacion with a dollorous scilence; neyther let me any longer inveighe in myne aunswere then I shall seam to preferre good reason to justefye my juste complainte: the cause wherof doth marche with more alarums of annoye thorow all the partes in me, then if I were presently pinched with the most grevous tormentes of the worlde; seeing that my life, with th'exposition of the same, is nothinge in respecte of that which thy ymportunities do laboure to set abroche and put in vent, for the onely satisfaction of a prodigall liberalitye. If the price of my life woulde suffice for the raunsom of myne honor and appaisement of thy appetit, thou couldest no soner ymagyn thy contentement then the same shoulde be exposed on thy behalfe; neyther wolde I take halfe the tyme to performe it which I have used in making the promise. I thought, alas! the late delyvery of my brother had brought to us all an undowted dispense of further trouble, and that he had buryed in the pitt of his ymprisonmente all occasions of further disquiette. And who wolde have judged but, in the laste assalte and unjuste offer of undeserved deathe, fortune had spitt the uttermoste of her poysened malice; and that in devestinge herselfe frome the theatrye or throane of rigorous crueltie, she had also broken in peces the bloddye arrowes wherewith of so longe time shee hathe persecuted our desolate howse, and pronounced trewyce at last to the wearye miseries of the

DISCOURSE I

wretched state of the Montanins? But alas! unhappie creature that I am, I fynde, nowe, our destenie is rather deferred then our miserye at an ende; seing that that unjuste goddes of unworthy revenge and moste cruell stepmother, invadinge mee wyth more fury then affore, doth threaten my yonge and tender yeares with more perentorye plages then ever shee thondred uppon any of my former race. For if ever shee pursewed oure fathers, graundefathers, or anye predecessours, with mortall affliction, or intente of utter ruyne, it is nowe shee hath chosen her tyme to put to her laste hande to the extreame extirpacion of the miserable reliques and remeyndor of oure pore house; eyther by the wilfull losse and perpetuall exile of the my deare brother, or untymely death of thy dysolate Angeliqua, who canne not make prostitucion of her chastetye wythout the sacrafyes and oblation of her miserable life. What is destenye, if this be not the consent and judgement of the heavens, with resolution to supplant the stock and grafts of our house; seing that I, a simple girle, without force, voide of assistance of age or experience, is constrained to admitt th' one of two evils; wherof the choice oughte, and is hable, to amase the moste wise and experienced creature that this day enjoyeth the benefytt of mortall life? Alas! my harte faileth me, and reason, forsaken and flede from me, hath lefte my minde ballauncinge in suche confucion and contraryetie of thoughtes, that beinge broughte to th' extremetye of two distresses of equal perill and indifferente terror, I doubte whether to comit my life to shorte and sharpe penaunce, or prolonge my dayes in pyninge dollor and secrete care of minde. For the sentence which thou haste pronounced of both our estates is, eyther to make a seperation by extreme exile of my brother (who is no lesse deare in my harte then the tendrest part of myne eye; and in whom, nexte after God, I have reposed the whole assuraunce of my hope and consolacion of life) or els, in conservinge him, I see myselfe at pointe to bee constrained to make marchandise (I can not tell in what sorte, nor for what price) of that precious treasure, whiche, once loste, is not to be reclaimed by any meanes; and, for the garde wherof, al women of uprighte

minde, honoring vertue or desierous of reputacion, oughte rather to expose theimselves to a thousande mortall perilles and hazardes of deathe, if nature and life were hable to abide soo manye encownters, then to suffer one spotte of infamie to staine or corrupt this precious ornament and gifte of chastitie: which, as it is the only support and decoration of the life of an honest woman; so, for a contrarye, she that loseth the possession of so riche a jewel or devesteth herselfe of the title and crown of so great a glorye, althoughe she seame to live, and kepe place amonge other creatures, yet is she dead in effecte, and her life recorded in the booke of blacke defame as a witnes againste herselfe in the latter daye, and in the meane tyme a continual reproch and objection of shame to such as she leaveth to succede her in kindred or name. How can that lady or gentleman marche amongest the crewe of vertuous dames, whose honor is eyther in doubte, or reputacion in dekaye, by the losse of her honour, but that the blod of shame, appearyng in all parts of her face, wil not only discover her faulte, but makes her wearye of her lyfe by the remorce or remembrance of so foule a forfaiture? How coulde the doughters of the Emprour Augustus seame justly meritorious of the title of true nobilitie, or worthely deserve to be called the children of such a father, after their sondry villaines and lascivious trade of lyving hadd dispoyled them of the giftes and ornamentes of vertue, presentyng theim (to the eyes of all the worlde) as creatures not worthy to have the common ayre to breath upon them? What honor hadd Faustina in wearyng the imperial crowne upon her head; seyng she had loste the crowne and garlande of chastetie, by her disordred and dishonest life? Sewer she oughte not to enjoy the breath of lyfe, nor participatt with the presence or benefitt of the earth, that makes lesse stoare of her honestie then of the deareste part belongynge to her soule or bodye: neyther is shee worthie to be admitted amongest the felowshipp of vertues Dames, that departeth with so precious an ornament at other price then the exchange or loasse of her lyfe. Notwithstandyng, the writers of former tyme have done manifest wronge to diverse simple women, whose vertue, in preservinge

DISCOURSE I

their honest name with true title of pudicitie, deserveth rather an everlastyng remembrance, with notes of universall prayse in pillers of eternitie, then to be buried without pompe in the tombe of darke oblivion. Ah dear brother! what is become of thy auncient generosity and vertue of minde whych heretofore thou haste exposed on the behalfe of the honest and chast ladies of thy kinred and race? Haste thou converted that care and curious zeale, whiche hytherunto all men have noted in the on my behalfe, into a present intente to take awaye my lif and renowme after my death? Because thy perversed fortune hath deprived the of the moste part of thy possessions and lyvinges, wilt thou, therfore, that I make lyke sale of min honor, whyche I have kepte hetherunto with so greate watche and diligence? Wilte thou, my deare brother, that Anseamo do triumphe, with more glorye in the victorie of my virginity then if he had constrained the rest and remeinder of our miserable race to passe by the edge of his mordrynge sword? Remember alas! that the hurtes and diseases of the soule be farre more vehement, and of a contrary disposition, to them which afflict and annoy the body. And is it I, unhappie and thrys wretched girle, that must do penaunce for th' offences of us all? Is this the justice of the gods, or rigorous dome of my angry destenies? If the heavens have resolved my ruine, why do they not rather

Venus.

committ me to fatal execution then present me, upon the alter of filthie ymolacions or offerings, to the devouring goddesse of filthie lust; and to appease the appetit of a young man, who, peradventure, desiereth no other pray then the spoiles of my honor? How happie was the noble Virginia of Rome, who was slaine by the handes of her owne father, to avoyde violacion of her bodye by the lascivious Emprour Appius, the common enemie to the honor and reputacion of al honest ladies! Alas! why staith my brother to purchasse like renowme by performing semblable execution upon me, rather than, of his owne mind, to become the infamous minister of my life, readye to abide the daunger of dishoneste force,—if God become not the protectour of his servant, and take my cause into his hande? Why dothe death deferre to do his dutie, or staye to dip

the end of his venemous dart in the congeiled blod of my dieng sprit, and dispatch me with spede to visit the shadowes of my happy predecessours; who, understanding my present distresse, can not be voyde (I am sewer) of passion on the behalfe of my wretched extremity? Why did not God and nature give power to the midwyf to smother me at th'instant that her cursed handes received me from the wombe of my mother, rather then, in preservyng my lyfe with the milke of tender norriture, to make my youth subject to sondry sortes of affliction, and now, in the age and expectation of quiet, to present me the choice of ij of the most mortall evils in the worlde? What councel have I to assiste me in so doubtefull a case? Or whiche waye can I tourne me, where I am not indifferently assailed with remorse on the behalf of my brothers request, and shame, with desperacion, in the simple remembrance of the fact? Alas! shall I loase him whom nature and lawe of kinde, have named the one halfe of myselfe? And to commit th'effecte of his demande is no lesse dampnable afore God then if I did violence and force against myselfe with mine owne handes. Neyther have I remedie or reason to eschew either of theis evils, but by th'assistance of the, Oh! cruel Attropos! whom I besech, with the laste teares of this complaint, to whet thy fatall knif, and shred in sonder with spede the twyst of my wretched daies; least, in preventinge thy slacknes or slender haste, theis handes of mine undertake to supplie thine office with unnaturall revenge of my present sorow.' Wherewith her teares and sighes ceassed upon a sodaine, and her tounge, foltering in her mouth, her complexion of face was also converted into a pale and ghastlye regard, in suche sorte as the passion of this traunce, stopping the conduites and course of her breath, she seamed to have as litle feeling or show of lyfe as the seat wheron she sat. Which, when Charles behelde, with resolution that the misterie conteined neither vision, nor dreame, nor charme of deceit, but that his syster had bene as utterly without hope of recovery, as she seamed senceles, and without breath, overcome with dolor and dispair to lyve after her whome he onely had preferred to so wretched a

Angeliqua falleth into a sound.

DISCOURSE I

death, fel upon a sodaine from the place wher he sat upon the grounde, without moving either hande or foote. The noise of whose fal restored Angeliqua to some litle rehalation and use of breath, recoveringe in like sorte the opening of her eyes, with a general mocion and feelyng in al her parts; and, being thus at libertie of free consideracion, her eyes disclosed immediatly the piteous estat of her brother, whom she judged now to have delivered her of further care to performe his requeste. Wherein, seing a generall retire of all his sences, and onely viewe of his deade bodye remeynynge to encrease her doloure, she stoode at the point to use the same revenge of herselfe that Thisbe dyd when she founde her frende dead. But finding his body warme, wyth some argument of recoverye, she forgat not the use of any medicine wherin she judged vertu to reclaime life. And falling withall flat upon the body of her deade brother, shee began to curse her fortune, and accuse the starres of crueltie; inveighing withal against the slender frendship of herselfe towardes hym who made no conscience to offer to dye, to preserve his patrimonie and inheritaunce only for her sustentation. In the ende, by th' applicacion of certeine medecines and odoriferous smels, somtime sprinkling colde water upon his face, dropping viniger into his mouth, and somtime rubbynge his temples and pulses, wyth other sleightes to revoke hym that is but halfe dead, she brake the bed of his traunce, openyng a vent to utter the course of his breath. Wherewith, also, his eyes disclosed and chalenged their wonted lyght, beholdinge with dolefwll regardes his desolate syster; who, seinge all his partes replenished eftsones with vital mocions, that he was in case to understand and gyve judgment of her wordes, sayed unto hym:—'Seinge my mishap is so great that she will admit no dispense of her malice, and thou, deare brother, so whollie resolved in thy wilful imagination that I must yelde to thy somance, and become the minister of the sentence, of thy harte, more prodigall and bountiful then is convenient by the consent of raison, I am content to become thankefull accordyng to thy desyer, and more readye to performe thy requeste then thou haste raison to exacte so muche uppon

me. Wherefore, do awaye thy desperat regardes, and lookes not unlike to him that is plunged in a passion of tremblyng feare, receyvinge with gladnes the present offer of thy carefull syster, who here presentes herselfe the handemaide of thy will; gyvynge the ful commission to dispose of this pore carkasse at thy pleasure, and make a present of it to suche as thou accomptes thyselfe so greatly indebted unto. Only I am to warne the of one thing—wherin thou canst not note me of any mislike by justice, because the integritie and vertue of my intent defends me from imputacion that waye, —and which, also, I give the absolute assurance to performe —that is, being once discharged of thy authoritie, thou shalt use no more power to restraine me from doinge the thing which my minde hath alredd decreed; protesting unto the by the right hande of hym that governeth the universal globe, that, as no man shal touch Angeliqua but in sorte and order of mariage, so, if I be committed to a further force, thou and al the worlde shal perceive that I have a hart wil enharden thies handes to make a sacrifice of my life to the chastetie of those noble ladyes, whiche heretofore have rather desyred to dye then live with a note of infamie or dishonour. For as my soule shal never stande in hazarde of grace by the villainy of any acte which my bodye shal commit by free consent, even so if this carkasse be forced to violacion, I doubte not but the integritie of my minde wil purchasse a priviledg againste all purgatorie of my soule, witnessing in the other worlde myne innocencie and invincible hart.' Wherewith, she renewed the alaram of her sorowe with a fresh supplie of sodaine teares; with suche abundaunce and impetuositie of dule, that a man woulde have thoughte that the whole humour and moyste partes of her braine had bene drained and dried by the surges of continuall teares whiche ceassed not to fal from her waterie eyes. Her brother, for his part, albeit he greved with the desolation of his chaste syster, yet the joye he conceived in her present consent to his demaunde toke awaye the passion of that sorowe, felynge (as it were) some secrete instincte or forewarnyng of the happie successe and effect of the liberal offer of Angeliqua; to whom he excused his importunitie in

Angeliqua consenteth to her brother's request.

DISCOURSE I

some sorte after this manner:—'I was never so gredie of life,' saith he, 'but I coulde be content rather to renounce nature and dye then to solicite the in any respect whiche mighte bringe thy honor or reputacion in peril of infamous interest; neyther would I lyve to se, and muche lesse be partaker of, the thinge that anye waye seames to tourne thee to displeasure: whiche thou shouldest alwayes have founde by effecte and touche of finger, if this liberall curtesye of our enemye had not procured me to wrest the to that which honestie denieth the to graunte, and I unhable to demaunde without great wronge to thy vertue and no lesse prejudice to mine owne honor. And, as the feare I have to be noted of ingratitude hath taken away al respects of honor or honestie to us both, so the vertue and noble hart of Anseamo doth not only offer an assured argument of hope, but also presentes absolute cause of firme belefe, that the only displeasure thou shalte finde in this enterprise will appeare when thou art firste presented unto him. For it is not possible he shold use villany on the behalfe of her, the onely regarde of whose love hath made him make no conscience to hazarde the displeasure of his parentes and chief frendes; not refusing withall (without sute or importunitie) to delyver him whom he hated, and had power to put to what vengeaunce he wold.' Here may be noted th'operacion of two extremities of several dispositions, natural zeale and fraternal dutie quarellinge wyth womanly shame, and raison mentaining contencion within herselfe. Angeliqua knewe and confessed that her brother dyd no more than he oughte, and that she was also leviable to the same bond and obligation of dutie; and, on the other part, th'estimation of her honor, with regard to defende her chastetie, supplanted such dutifull respectes of nature, and forced her to an integritie of judgement in that which she accompted both unjust and unlawful. Wherupon, resolving to observe both the one and the other, and seame chiefly to be thankeful to the demaunde of her brother, determined to discharge him of the debte towardes his long enemy and late frend; with intent, notwithstanding, rather to die by the stroake of her owne handes then villanously to loase the flower of that

which made her lyve famous and of greater renowme then the moste part of the ladies of that citie.

But the vertue of this Salymbino is of more rare singularitie, and deserveth a greater commendacion, then the continencie of Cyrus, sometime King of Persia; who, fering a force of intysement to lorke under the flattering beautie of the faire and common Pantea, wold never suffer her to be brought to his presence, leaste her wanton regardes shoulde make him abuse the renowme of his auncient honor and brake the sacred devotion which all men ought to use in mariage, with violacion of his faith confirmed by former vowe to his wyfe: for Anseamo, enjoyeng the presence with free commandement over her whom he loved no lesse then his owne life, did not only abstaine to abuse the bountiful gifte of his fortune, but also declared an effect of more nobilitie and vertue of mind then the saied Cyrus; as you may note in the next acte of this historie attending his present discoverie. For, as the Montanyn and his sister had devided their deliberation into certaine points, with abrigement at laste of their longe discourse, and that the faire Angeliqua had staied the source of her teares, with expectation of the ende of that which they had but nowe begon, Anseamo repaires from the contrey to his pallais in the towne. Wherof, at viij of the cloke in the evening, Don Charles received advertisement, and without delaye of further time willed his sister to attire herselfe in the best order she could. With whom, and onely one man (to cary a lanterne of slender lighte), they went to the lodging of Salymbino, whose servant by chaunce encountred them at the pallais gate of his maister, not without astonishment to see them there with desier to speake with Seigneur Salymbyno: who, understanding what companie the Montanyn brought with hym, was not forgetful for his part to discende with expedicion, having caried afore him ij staff torches geving light, til he came even to the gate; where, omittinge no kinde of curtesye in receaving the brother, he was barred (as it seamed) to expose any shew of service on the behalfe of her whom he chiefly desiered to honor; but, standing (as it were a man enchaunted, or some hermit in expectation to heare the aunswere of his

DISCOURSE I

oracle) was no lesse astonied with the viewe of his newe gestes then if he had sodainly dropped out of the cloudes. Which confusion and trouble of mind was immediatly espyed of Don Charles; who as he imagined, without great studie, that the presence and beautie of his sister sturred up the perplexitie of Salymbyno, so he went about to breake the amaze with theis wordes:—'Syr,' saith he, 'we have cause of speciall conference with you, whiche requireth neyther publike audience nor other witnes then our selves.' Wherewith he offred them his chamber, and became their guide thither with more shew of dutie then desiere to be intreated; and leading his deare Angeliqua by the hande, passed thorowe the hal into a certaine gallerie, furnished with riches, and accotrementes belonginge to the greatnes of his estate; where, beinge set in rich chaires and seates of honor, and the place voyde of all companie, savynge the presence of the ij simple clyentes and mercifull judge, Don Charles Montanyno rise from his place and spake to th' other in this sorte:—'Albeit the offers of servitude be alwayes moste hatefull to freemen, and that the noble hart can hardly brooke to strike sayle for any sommance of adversitie, yet the bonde of a good tourne, or benefyt alredy don, levieth such alarums of remorce to the mynde environned with vertue, that she forceth not only an equall consideracion and recompense, but also claymeth a continuall remembraunce and thankeful recordacion in him who was firste partaker of the benefyt. Wherin as I fynde my selfe specially touched, above all that ever was blessed with frendship not looked for in this world, so, Seigneur Salymbyno, I hope you wil excuse me, yf, in the firste place of my catalogue of thankesgeving, I honor you (contrary to the lawes and customes of our common welth) with the title of Lorde and Maister; seinge the vertue of your selfe, declared in the greatest distresse that ever hath or coulde happen unto me, doth not only yelde you by justice such title, but also challengeth at my hande a bonde of no lesse dutifull and continuall service towardes you, then you expect of the moste drudge and slave that foloweth your traine. For what disposition is more detestable then the note of unthanke-

Montanyn to Seigneur Salymbyno.

fulnes; or wherin are we bounde to so franke and prodigal an exposition of ourselves, and all that we have, as in the remuneracion and retourne of the pleasures we have received by straungers? Whiche I coulde enlarge with credible authorities of elder dayes, and confirme by familiar experience of our age, savinge that, in supplienge the tyme with repeticion of antiquityes, I should defer yet longer the doinge of that whiche I chieflye desyer to performe. But, grevinge above all thinges, that in the viewe and remembrance of their vertues I fynde myselfe farre unhable to be equall or excede anye that ever were renowmed or noted to be thankefull, (wherein, albeit I have juste cause to crye out of the malice of my fortune; not for bringinge me so depely in your debt —which I thinke was wrought by general consent of the heavens—but for that she hath lent me such slender choice of meanes to requite so greate a curtesye) yet, in appealinge to the vertue of your mynde, I doubte not to make you understande the greatnes of my desyer, and whether ingratitude bee anye waye harbored in the harte of this poore gentleman; who, havinge but himselfe and the chaste will of his syster (being both preserved in entier by the onlye assistance of your favor), makes heare a presente of ourselves and al that belongeth unto us, with commission (sir) to dispose of our lyves, lyvinges, and honour, in any respecte it shall lyke you to ymploye theim. And because I am more than halfe perswaded that th' only respecte of Angeliqua hathe kindled the first coales of your desyer, causing a conversion of the hate whiche discended unto you by inheritance, into a disposition to love that whiche your predecessors dispised mortallie; and, for that, by the heavye clogge of our extreme miserie, and harde condicion of state, wee are not hable to shonne the name of unthankeful, but by th' assistance of her that first procured the debt; she, I saye, who forced your liberalitie on my behalfe is heare, a readye pawne for the satisfaction of that whiche I confesse to owe unto you. It is (syr) my syster whom you see afore you; who, to absolve the bonde of us bothe, dothe yelde herselfe unto you with fre submission of her honoure and lyfe at your pleasure. And I, beinge her brother, having her ful

DISCOURSE I

and free consente in my power, do make you a presente of her, bequeathinge you no lesse propertie then eyther I or she hath of herselfe, with authorytye to dispose of her as you thinke good; dowtinge not but you wil accepte the offer, and respecte the gyfte, accordinge to the value, with remembrance from whence it came, and in what sorte it ought to be used.' Wherwyth, not taryenge the replie of the other, nor to bid his syster farewel, he flonge downe the steares and went ymedyatlye to his owne house. If Anseamo were indyffrently amased at the firste arryval of both the Montanyns, or astonnyed with the oracion of her brother, it is nowe that he is double perplexed, both with the soddayn departure of Don Charles, and also to see in his presence the effecte of the thinge hee only desyred, and never was hable to ymagyn, and muche lesse durste enter into hope to have it come to passe. Wherein, as hee was no lesse gladd then he had cause, beinge in the free contemplation and companye of her whose bewtie and vertue hee accompted above the respecte of all commodyties and pleasures of the worlde, so he labored of semblable dollor on the behalfe of the passion and secrete sorowe of mynde whiche he noted in her touchinge her presente change of estate; the same forcinge him also to a firme perswacion that th' accidente paste proceded rather of the generosytie, or to muche shew of corage and vertue, in the harte of the yonge man, then by consente, or any contentemente at all, to the faire Angeliqua: whome, at the same instante hee toke betwen his armes, and, proffringe certeine chaste kysses, dryed her watrye eyes of teares, whiche ceassed not to droppe with greate abundance, preferringe unto her this kinde of short consolacion:—'Yf ever I felte, or desyred to understande, with what wynge dyd flye the unconstante goddes, whiche the poetes tearme the chaunge and varyetie of the affaires of the worlde, it is nowe (good madam) that I am presented wyth suche a manifest and strange proofe, that I dare skarcely beleve that whiche I see in offer afore myne eyes. For if the only respecte of you, and service whiche my harte hathe vowed and sworne unto you, hath constrained me to dissolve the bonde of extreame hate, which, by request of my parentes, I have

Fortune (accordinge to the poetes) is the change and alteration of the worldly affayres.

bene enjoyned to beare to you and youre house; and, in that devocion, have delyvered your brother, as you knowe, from deathe; I see fortune denieth me the tryumphe of the victorye, for that your brother hath surmounted me in honour and vertue. And nowe do I see that, as the flatteringe gle of an uncerteine fortune oughte not to alter the goodnes of the disposition, so adversitie is not hable to corrupte the vertue of the noble mynde; nor, when the good torne is done, the memorye of the benefytt is not hatefull to the thankeful man. For, albeit my example deserveth commendacion, for that I opened the waye and became (as it were) youre brothers guide, gevinge the first earnest penny of humanitie betwene us, yet his ymytacion seames meritorious of treble praise; for that he hath not onely acknowledged my curtesye and retorned it with doble interest, but also laboured to excede me in the true effectes of sincere nobylitie. Wherein, for your parte, beinge my vassal, by your owne consente and special gyfte of your brother, albeit you have more reason of doubte thenne cause to reappose assuraunce in my fydelytie, for that our newe reconcilement is not yet confirmed with any continuance of longe time, nor our amytie justefied but by one simple profe or experience of late, yet shal your selfe be judge, and the whole worlde witnesse with you, that my hart is no lesse fre from corruption then farre from dishonest or evil intent on your behalfe; and that I pursewe but a consomation of that which God hath geven as a dyvine sacrament and holy law amongest us. Wherfore,' saith he, (with a fresh charg of honest kysses) 'do away, good ladye, your teares of present dule, and dispaire no more of the perfecte loialtie of your servaunte; who will deale no worse with you, havinge you in his power, then at suche time as he languished on your behalfe, and durst not discover the desyer he had to do you service. Neither shal your brother repent him of his curtesie, nor you in consentinge to obey him. For, albeit you are mine by peculiar graunt and mutual accord, and that your fortune hath geven me such scoape of authoritie over you that your honor waigheth only in the ballance of my disposition, yet the respecte of myne owne reputacion, and honour

DISCOURSE I

DISCOURSE I

that I owe to youre vertue, dothe defend you from other injurye at my hande then in making you the only maistrys of my hart, to crave your consent in lawfull mariage and societie of wedlocke: whereby th' aunciente mutynies and civill grudges shall not onlye retire and receave ende, but oure howses, rejoyned eftsones with this indissoluble bonde of affynitye betwene us, shal lyve hereafter in contynuall quiet, enjoyenge a mutuall amytie, more firme and stronge on both partes then the former quarrells were fatal or ful of mortalytie.'

These newes, stayinge the course of wonted teares, and dismissinge withal al dollorous argumentes or regardes of sorowe, sturred uppe suche a complexion or dye of natural white and redde in the face of the faire Syennoyse, that she seamed rather a goddes syttinge in her glistering troane then an ymppe or creature of nature; forcinge suche a vehemencye of desyer in the harte of Salymbyno, that he was dryven eftesones to geve a second charg of her goodwil, with a franke offer to make participation unto her of halfe his livinge and richesse. Wherewyth shee presented hym semelye reverence with a majestye of modestie and womanly behaviour, retorninge his request with thankes due to his liberal offer, with further assurance for her part to omit neyther indevor, nor diligence, nor declaration of dutie, on the behalfe of hym whom God hathe reserved for her laweful husbande and companion of bedde. Wherewith, after they had spent some litle momente in embrasinge one an other, and certein kysses given and received recyprocallye betwene theim, Anseamo knocked for an olde awnte of his, lyenge in his house, to whose charge and fydelytie he commytted the glorye of his newe conqueste. And, fyndinge the leaste momente of delaye greatly hurteful to his desyer, dispatched ymediatlye several messengers to his deare and nearest parentes and frendes; who, obeyinge the expedition of his short sommance, came ymediatlye unto his house, where he requested their assistance of advise and companye in the consommacion of a busynes of great importance. Wherein, if they appered willinge, or liked of his request, he seamed (I am sewer) to use above an ordinarie seleritie in the execution of his enter-

prise. And sending for his awnte, with her new charge and his deare Angeliqua, repaired immediatly (not withoute the greate amaze of his frendes) to the pallaies of the Montanin; where, skarcely givinge leave to the interteynementes and proffers of court wherwith Don Charles saluted hym and his companye, he recited to his newe brother in lawe, in the hearinge of the rest, that as, not longe since, he, with his syster, came to his lodginge with request to communicate with him in secrete, so, for his parte, he is nowe there afore hym to reveale suche thinges as he hadd determined since his departure, and that in the publike audience and witnes of that companie; whiche he hadd assembled of purpose, and to whom, with al the worlde, he intended to imparte his rare honestie and vertue, with suche revenge as himselfe mente to take uppon theim as seamed to honoure him with the offer of any pleasure or surmounte him in the gifte of thankefull dealyng. Whiche wordes seamed to ende as the whole companye was set in order with expectacion to see th' effecte of this misterie. And beinge all in scilence he torned his face with an oracion to the multitude in these tearmes:—'Me thinkes I see you all in a wonderfull amaze, with severall ymaginacion of my entente in procuringe this assemblie at so inconveniente an hower and in suche a place; where none of you all (my kinsmen and frendes) nor my selfe hetherunto, have sette foote to enter, without desier to endomage or do some notable harme to the reste of theym that remaine of the Montanyn Lyne. Whiche astonishemente, I shall also suspende in you till the ende of this shorte preamble, which I have preferred for the better understandinge of the parte I meane to playe. And if you will consider with regarde of indifferente judgement, and waighe in equal ballance the thinge whiche is called good, in the hartes of suche as, differrynge from the brutall sorte, do followe the parte of raison properly called spiritual, you shall see, by that meane, that the generosytie and highe harte, grafted in us by our greate mystres and firste mother dame nature, doth never cease to make shewe of severall effectes, sometyme bringinge furthe one vertue, sometime makynge declaration of an other; whiche, also, do preferre

Salymbyn to his frendes for the marage of Angeliqua.

DISCOURSE I

theyr sondrye frutes, accordynge to the excellencie of the noble sprynge and fyrste source of the same. Wherein, also, this nobylitie of minde hath such a force and speciall priviledge by her fyrste founder, that, albeit all humaine thinges are framed of a mettall of instabilitye subjecte to chaunge, yet is she only founde firme and voide of all revolucion. And thoughe she bee one chief but and marke whereat Dame Fortune doth loase her inconstante arrowes, shakynge her persynge dartes againste her on all sydes, yet is shee founde soo invincible againste her assaultes that shee is as voyde of power to move her as the blustrynge windes, forcynge an incredible furye to the angrye disposition of the sea, seame unhable to sturre the harde rocke or stonye mountayne. Where uppon it followeth, that as the greatnes of fortune wyth glee of infynite riches doo lifte uppe, and make swell, the harte of a villaine or one of base condicion; so the synister chaunge of estate, nor anye malyce or ministers of povertye, can embase or make stowpe the greatnes of corage in theym that are wroughte in a contrary frame, or made of other stuffe then the vulgare sorte: for they kepe alwaies a majestie of theyr originall, and observe in suche sorte th'instincte of the bloode whereof theyr auncestors were made noble, and gave theym sucke of the veray milke of vertue, that, what dispites or malicious somonce soever fortune doth sende theim, the temperat argument of modestie in their complexion and countenaunce, wyth true effect and operation of true vertue of their mind, do sufficientlye argue their condicion in defyinge the threates of the worlde, and makes absolute declaracion that, under the vaile of suche miserie, is shrowded a harte deservinge better allowance then the adversatie whiche tormentes theym. Herein consistes the whole glorye of the youthe of the Persians and Meades, who, albeit were norished and broughte uppe amongeste the heardmenne of their parentes, yet gave they place to no contrey in magnanymytie of mynde. And who hath exceded, or bene equall, in generosytie or noble corage of harte to Romulus, the firste founder of the prowde cytie of Rome? Yet was hee assisted with no better educacion or trayninge uppe thenne in caves and cabynettes of shep-

Vertue firme and not subject to change.

The noble myndeinvincible agaynst fortune.

King Cyrus norished and brought up in the contreye.

Romulus brought up amonge shepherdes.

herdes, and suche as inhabyte the playne and deserte fieldes for the garde of their cattell. All whyche I have preferred unto you (my Lords and Ladyes) as a special preprative to the peculiar praise and commendacion of the undowted noblenes of mynde of Signeur Charles Montanyn and his syster, who, wythoute prejudice or wronge to anye, maye well be tearmed the peragon for bewtie, and mirroer of honeste and chaste behavioure, above all the ladies aund gentlewomen in oure common wealthe. Whose house, as you knowe, hath bene so oppressed wythe contynual persecucion, that onlye they two are the laste remeyndoures of their whole race, standinge, also, not longe since at the point of extreme ruyne and utter subversion for ever. Yet the ympocision of suche straunge miseryes colde neyther move any dymunicion of corage, nor staye of desyer, to expose an effecte of that vertue and bowntie whyche nature hathe appointed to occupie the hartes of theym that bee true noble. Wherein as I see some justice to exclaime againste the crueltie of our auncestors, for that the only respecte of a smal broyle, happeninge by chaunce, hathe moved them to thonder a most mortal vengance of this so auncient and vertuous a stocke; so, for my part, being pryvie to mine own conscience, (with remembrance of the wise admonicion of the grave philosopher, saying, that as of unlawfull winninge of the father comes just losse to the sonne, soo hee that makes himselfe a tyrante by force becomes oftentimes a slave by justice) I thinke it necessarye, not onely to blowe the laste retraite of all grudge betwene us, but also worke the effecte and confirmation of a future amytie for ever hereafter. And if the view of th' auncient quarrels and mutunies of former time do staye your consente to presente compassion of their case, yet let not the honest trade of lyfe, civill behaviour, and modest disposition, of this brother and syster, depart without the due mede and hyer of their vertue; neyther let us suffer their place in the senate to bee emptie or voyde of supplie, that earste hathe bene furnished with the presence of the moste noble and wise men of our cytie; to th' ende that our example may serve as a precedent to the future tyme, in that th' only

Of unlawfull winning of the father commes just losse to the sonne.

DISCOURSE I

respecte of vertue, and not ryches, makes us restore the dekayed stockes of our common wealthe. Wherein, also, we shall justelye deserve the title of our highe discente from the puissant and mightie emprours of Rome; who gave ever more honour to the vertuous povertie, then regarde or commendacion to the richeman converted into vice or abhominable indevours. But nowe, because I see you alredie forewearyed with the lengthe of a lingrynge suspence, desyerynge to knowe the cause of thys greate commendacion of the Montanyns, with request to abridge my tediouse discourse, if you will lende me a litle liberty to speake, with patience to heare the chiefe poyntes of my protestation, the spedie ende of my tale shal restore present quiet and contentment to your trobled myndes. It is longe since, I muste confesse, (and yet th' offence is neyther mortal nor falte so hainous but it may be forgiven) that the beauty, with other parts of perfection, in the faire Angeliqua here presente, so ravished my sences and robbed me of my libertie at one instante, that th' only exercise whych occupyed my head daye and nighte for a longe tyme, was the sondrye devyses I ymagyned to discover unto her my martiredome. Wherin, I fedd the hongry humor of my affection with such alarams and contraryetie of conceites, that havinge by thys meane loste the necessary appetite of the stomake and usual desyer of sleepe, I felte suche a diminucion of nature and lyvelye force thorowe all the partes in me, that I was presented at one tyme wyth the choice of two moste perillous evils in the worlde; the one to dye afore my tyme by suffocacion of pynnynge dollour, or els to yelde to a deprivation of my sences and gyfte of understandinge for ever. Wherein I was also pursued wyth the readye assistaunce of perplexed dispaire, for that I saw no meane to make that seame easye wherein I judged so greate an impossibilitye, chieflye by the grounded quarels of our ii houses. Whereby, albeit, the warre seames ended, and the grudge halfe appaised betwene us, yet was I of opinyon that there remeined an equall desyer in the hartes of us both neyther to wishe well the one to the other, and muche lesse to absteine from further slaughter when soever a newe occa-

The Romains respected more the vertuous povertie, then allowed the rich man converted into vice.

sion shoulde eftesones fall oute. Neyther could theis mortall impedimentes argue sufficient raison to deminish min affection, but sturred uppe rather a treble increase of desyer, accordynge to the passioned minde enchaunted with love; who makes suche as he possesseth more apte to desyer, then hable to attayne to the effect of that whiche they wishe, preferrying alwayes a simple likelihode in that wherin appereth an absolute impossibilitye, to th' ende to afflicte theyr miserable lyves wyth continuall annoye. But as theis extremeties had filled my head full of dispaire, and committed me to a continuall carefulnes of minde—because I coulde neither staye the course of my affection, nor encounter the object of my desyer—beholde! fortune entred into compassion of my state, assistynge me wyth so readye a medecine for my greate disease, that, when I was voyde of all expectation or hope of recoverye, I was presented with a franke offer of my desyered praye. For as it is not unknowen to you all, that, sence the departure of viij or ten dayes, the Lord Montanyn here present, beinge accused afore the Senate uppon certeine peinall statutes devised by our cruell state for the rappeale of banished men, was awarded by judiciall sentence to paye the forfaiture; whiche because he coulde not tender within the tyme, his greadie enemies forced the law to a more rigour then was necessarie, in suche sort as th' executioner was reddye to extende upon his bodie, for want of a supplye of a thosande florents to choake the covetous humour of the magistrates: even so the view of his extremitie sturred up such a remorce in my mynde, that me thought I was sommoned by dutie to prevent the destruction of him who was brother, and th' only comfort, of her whom I had alredye proclaimed the soveraigne ladye and mystres of my hart. In whiche good vaine of devocion, I payd the money and procured his delyverye; who (for his parte) devininge, I can not tell upon what occasion, that the beautie of his sister did worke th' effect of suche a vertue in me, hath not onely been thankefull for the benefit, but also overcome me in honeste liberalitie and true noblenes of mynde, presenting me in the beginnynge of this eveninge, at myne owne howse, with a

Love make us more apte to desier then hable to attaine.

DISCOURSE I

prodigal offer, not onely of hymself and al that he hath, but also of his syster, whom he lefte with me to use and dispose at my pleasure. Wherein, for ende, I appeale to you all with one requeste, that, in waighinge rightly the gyft of the one and offer of the other, you will consider of them both, and assiste me immediatly wyth your advise in what sorte I may yelde a due meede to suche ij precious merites the one a most familiar patterne and precedent of true nobilitie, and the other a present of suche price and value that the greatest prince in Italy coulde do no wronge to his greatnes in yeldynge honor and homage to so rare a thinge.' Wherupon he stayed his further discourse, gyvinge place to th'assistantes for consultacion of the case; whiche, albeit they knewe imported deliberat advise afore the resolution of judgement, yet were they in amaze what sentence to gyve; because they were neither privie nor partakers of the determinacion of hym who had sommoned their apparance there rather to witnes the fact then decide the case, or impeshe his resolute intent by a contrarye councell. The ladies, his kynswomen, were so moved to admiracion wyth the majestie, and other argumentes of vertue, in the faire Angeliqua, that they had passed judgement on her syde; yf they had not feared to be refused of hym who wished their voice that waye, and who onely beinge touched above the rest most neare the quicke, dismissed their astonishment in reveilyng his owne determination in this sorte:—'Seinge you take so greate a tyme to discusse so small a matter, with no lesse doubte to publishe sentence of that whiche is alredye determined, let me abridge all arguments of further delaye, in decipheryng in playne wordes the thinge whiche hetherunto I have communicated but by circunstance. You shall understand, sayth he, (in takinge Angeliqua by the hande) that havinge the regarde of honor afore myne eyes, with desyer to recompence at full the honestie and vertue of the brother, I am resolved to take the, syster, to my deare and lawfull wyfe (preferrynge by that meanes a perfect unitye of that whiche longe tyme hath lyved in separacion) and make of twoo bodyes, earste and longe disjoyned, an equall wyll and entyer mynde; desyerynge all your consentes in the consom-

DISCOURSE I

mation of this alliance, whiche seameth rather the worke of God then an effect of the councell or diligence of man. For the lawe of mariage, beynge an institution of the highest, and the thinge wherin Christ firste glorified himself by miracle upon earth, is recorded in th' infallible booke of his foreknowledge, to th' ende nothynge chaunce whiche is not permitted and forseene by the providence of the God of marveils; who sewerlye layed his hande upon the, brother Montanyn, in touching the with distresse and perill of lyfe, to th' ende that my Angeliqua, being the onely meane of thy delyverye, might also laye an immovable fondacion of a mutuall unitie betwene our two houses; whiche, I hope, shall survive the length of tyme, and not ende but wyth the laste remeinder of eyther of our posterityes.' This conclusion, thus hearde of the parentes and kynsfolkes of Salymbyno, and canvaised a litle in their severall opinions, seamed at laste of such reason and indifferencie to them all, that they converted their conceites, whiche kepte them occupyed for a tyme, into a present disposition of wonderfull joye and gladnes; feelyinge in theyr intrals and inward partes (I can not tell by what secret instinct of minde) an approche of indissoluble tranquilitie on all partes, by the only conjunction of this newe allyance. And albeit there was no equalitye of porcion, and that the dowere of Angeliqua stoode aloff from the revenues of her newe consort, yet the vertue and giftes of grace appearyng in her made her seame hable to countervaile hym in any respect; and his frendes with one voice gave generall commendacion to the goodnes of his fortune, for plantyng his affection in so vertuous a soyle. Wherein, sewerly, they had good reason. For mariage, being a law and holye Sacrament given us from God as th' only knott of mutuall tranquillitie betwene man and woman, oughte to be embrased for the vertue and sinceritie of the thynge, and not abused with a regarde of richesse or other fylthye promocions of the worlde. And he that in the choice of his wyfe respectes chieflye her beautie and greatnes of porcion (besides a thousand pettie mutinyes that fall out in housekeping) escapeth seldom without a sprit of grudge or cyvill discension disturbynge hys quiet, wyth a continuall

Mariage the first thing wherin Christ glorified himself by miracle.

In the choice of our wife wee ought to respect the vertue and gyftes of the mind, and not the riches or exterior beautye.

DISCOURSE I

humour of frettynge disposition feedynge hys mynde. For the glasse of beautie retireth and gyveth place to age, whiche also mortifyeth the delite or desyer of further pleasure; and, on th'other syde, the woman, knowynge her discent more noble, and porcion to excede the welthe of her husbande, forgetteth not to take hart at grasse, and, deckynge her garlande wyth all sortes of flowers of pryde and disdayne, seekes to governe and gett the upper hande of hym, who, as he is appointed her heade by the woordes of Scripture and institution of nature, so he oughte to kepe a straite hande of the same bridle and raine of authoritie, usinge it as a chek to restraine the desyer of libertie in her that studieth to have hym in subjection. Wherein, I wishe all bachilors and younge men unmaried to be armed againste so greate a mischiefe with the experience of suche theyr frendes as they see touched with the like griefe. And for my parte, I lament the disquiet of them as woulde and can not, or rather dare not, attempte a simple reformation in them who are borne to beare the yoke of awe and commandement of their husbandes. Retournynge, therewyth, to the sequeile of Salymbyno, who, workynge the laste effecte and consommation of his curtesye, gave the one halfe of his goodes of all sortes in favour of the mariage, adopting at th'instant the Montanyn as his brother in lawe and assured frende, with generall substitution to all his goodes, if he chaunced to dye without heire of his bodye, and havyng children, he conveighed unto hym, by suche assuraunce in revercion as the lawe coulde devise, that moytie whiche he gave in dowerye to his faire Angeliqua; whom, the Sonday folowynge, he maried, with pompe due to both their estates, to the universall contentement of his frendes, and speciall quiet of the Citye, who had endured longe affliction by the mortalitie and civill warre of theis ij houses. Suche be the varieties happenynge in the successe of our worldly affaires. Wherein, who wil denye but that adversitie somtime is necessarie for men? Seinge she doth not only force a wonderfull remorce and reformacion of lyfe, but also workes often tymes an effecte of that wherein appeared an absolute impossibilitie of conquest by any other meane. And truly the vertue of

Adversitie is necessary for that it makes us parfect.

this example discredites utterly the commendacion of the auncient Romaines; amongeste whome, as there chaunced diverse tymes greate enimyties and grudge of mynde, so there folowed a spedie reconcilement, albeit, not by suche meanes as this franke attonement betwene the Salymbyns and Montanyns; but some were reclaymed by the offer of promocion, some solicited by the voice of the whole common welth and confirmed by the present gyfte of some notable office, and other with a regard to peculyar proffit; not one of them all approchynge neare the magnanimitie in the worste of these three.

Whereof the one, sommoned by a passion of love, seamed to excede nature in perfourmynge an exploit not hable anye waye els to be wrought to effect. And yet there be that, cryenge out againste love, paintes hym in cullors of rage, follye, and frenzye. But suche are rather abused wyth theyr owne conceites, then hable to consider ryghtelye the vertue of that impression. For love, in the noble harte, is no other thing then the true subjecte of curtesye, the fountaine from whence distilleth the originall of all cyvill and good order, the onelye meane that moves us to moderacion when we are inclined to crueltie or revenge, and the chiefest norsse and preserver of peace amongest men. Wherein, yf some vile disposition happen to violat or pervert the lawes of so necessarie and auncient institution of nature, the vertue and subject itselfe, yet, oughte not bee touched wyth the cause of suche faulte, nor deserve to be noted of any corruption; seinge suche derogation procedes by the abuse of hym that knoweth not the perfection of the thynge. Which falles out also in experience in diverse other accidentes; who, beinge vertues of them selves, do loase theyr credit by the malice of suche as abuse them vyllanouslye. Wherupon the good thynge is often condemned by the folly of suche as are ignoraunt in the perfection of the same.

The vertues in love in a noble minde.

In the other appeares a rare disposition of a bountifull mind so farre from the abhominable spot of ingratitude, that his lyfe was ready to bee offred for the satisfaction and discharge of the curtesie, if the other had required it. Wherein, as you maye see greate effectes of true magnany-

DISCOURSE I

mitye, and wherein a noble mynde oughte not to bee overcome with the vertue of honeste curtesye, so, touchyinge the price of victorye (I meane, whiche of the three is moste meritorious of commendacion, and deserveth to weare the garland) I referre the judgement to th'indifferencie of suche as, wythout passion or parcialitye, do use to note the chaunces happenynge to men.

You see a mortall enemye sorowed for the miserie of his adversarie, but solycited thereunto (you will saye) by the inevitable force of love, whiche also wroughte his delyverye. The other marched wyth the glorye of a present so rare that the greatest Monarcke of the worlde maye be astonyed with the remembrance of his prodigall bountie. The wonderfull zeale and affection of the syster towardes her brother chalengeth no lesse praise then the reste: who, albeyt she had seene a proof of the curtesye of her enemye, yet had she no assurance of his modestie: notwythstandinge, to discharge everye waye her dutye towardes her brother, she layde her virginitye uppon the blocke of vyolacion.

The firste claymeth to be victor, because his laste vertue in the mariage excedes his former curtesie; but he hath overthrowen his enemie and not won the feelde, so that he is not to enjoye the praise or price of the victorye. The absolute resolution of the younge ladye to kyll herselfe, if she were forced to dishonnour againste her wyll, takes awaye all glorye and commendacion from her, yf the care to kepe honor and virginitye dyd not prevaile above the preservation of lyfe. The brother, and thirde of this crew, albeyt this prodigall offer proceded by compulcion of the former bountye of hys frende, yet the noblenes of hys mynde was equall to the reste, and hys vertue nothynge inferiour to eyther of the other twoo. And yet, yf it were not the singuler respecte he had to retourne hys benefytt wythe double interest, wyth care to bee more then sufficientlye thankefull to his patrone, I coulde dyminishe his glorye.

Wherein, because the lamentable tragedye of twoo poore lovers sommones me to discover theyr misadventure, wyth no lesse reason to furnishe the stage with a declaracion of theyr loyaltye then your ladyship hath alredye harde the

whole discourse of the rare vertues in Syenna, I leave suche gentlemen and skilful dames who take paine to skan this historye to argue the cause at large, and resolve judgement at leasure, not doubtynge of your integritye in yeldynge the true tytle of tryumphe and glorie to some one of the three whome you accompte moste worthie to bee crowned with the lawrel of victorye.

# DISCOURSE II

THE LONG and LOYALL LOVE betwene LYVYO and CAMYLLA, together with their lamentable death; the one dying of a passion of joye the first night he embraced his mystres in bedde; the other passed also the same way, as overcome wyth present sorow for the death of him whom she loved no lesse then herselfe.

## DISCOURSE II

### THE ARGUMENT

THERE is nothinge, how good and profytable so ever it appeare, whereon attendethe not a discommodytie to hym that deales in it wythout discrecion, together with a parentorye displeasure in receiving it contrarye to the consent of good governement. Wherin I may be assisted with sufficient confirmation in a daylye experience of the ordynarye meates, brothes, and other confections, tollerated by phizicke for the sustentacion of man: whiche, albeit bee good of theimselves, yet, being swallowed in glottonous sorte, they do not only procure a surfeyt with unsavery indisgestion, but also, converting our auncient healthe and force of nature into humors of debylytie destillinge thorowe all the partes of the bodye, do corrupte the blodde which of itselfe afore was pure and without infection. Even suche is the disposition of love, whose effectes, directed by reason (which oughte to guide everie accion and doing of man) be not suche enemies indeede to the quiet of our lyfe, as necessary meanes to reforme the rudenes of our owne nature; accordinge to the authoryte of the poet, affirminge that by love the rude man is reduced to a civilitie, the foole learneth wisedom, the cowarde becomes valiaunte, and the covetouse nigard settes his purse wyde open to hys frende; neyther is there any kinde of curtesye wherwith hee that is in love doth not participat. But who makes an experience of the contrarye, I meane without advise or judgemente, will throwe himselfe hedlonge into the golphe of a folishe and conning phantasye, escapes hardly without the rewarde whiche that frantike passion yeldeth ordenarely to suche as are unhappelye partakers of suche infection. Neyther is there any thinge more furthereth the ruyne and dekaie of man, then sufferinge the eyes of our understandinge to be seeled with suche vanytie as to ymitate that as a glot of our gredy desyers whiche nature hathe enjoyned to all estates to honour and embrace as a speciall

Sondry vertues in love.

vertue. And, trulye, me thinkes that that folishe and infortunat crewe mighte reserve th' errours and destructions of others as speciall pattornes and preceptes to restraine the humor of their owne madnes; by the whiche (or they be aware) they are ledd to the brinke of mortall destruction. Albeit, th' indiscretion of that miserable sorte seames nothinge unlike in comparaison to those that, havinge longe used the trade of thefte and robberye, and seinge their companions passe by the sentence of a corde, lacke grace notwithstandinge to disclaime the wickednes wherin they have bene nozeled so many yeares: neyther is their plage (or rather juste punishmente) any thinge inferior; for they, makinge a chiefe glorye of that whiche is moste imperfecte in love, are eyther so subjecte to dispaire, or beastely assotted withe the greedye encownter of the pleasure they fynde, that, procuring by theyr owne folly and want of order the processe of their fatall sommaunce in the entrey to their felycitye, are forced to resigne, at one instante, their lyfe and loathinge contentmente, of lesse contynuance then the paines in love seame grevous to the mynde that hath the gift to passe theim over by reason. And like as a vehement and inwarde greffe of the mynd (proceding by the malice of a synister fortune) is of such force to close the poares and conduictes of the vitall partes of man, that, cancellinge the commission of lyfe, the soule departes leavinge the body without sence; like power, I saye, hath the vehemencie of semblable gladnes, whiche, occupienge all the partes with a generall joye (excedinge the strength of nature) makes the mynde insufficient of force to withstande so greate a passion: whereby, strykinge the saile of lyfe, the bodye is seene to vanishe as the candle lackinge waxe, or weake, or other matter assistinge the flame whiche giveth lighte to the beholders. Whereof we have diverse authoryties in the histories of antiquitye; as one of the doughters in law to the high priest Helye, who, hearinge of the deathe of her husbande and the takinge of the arke of the lord, ended her lyfe with the dollorous reapport; the like happeninge unto her father in law, for the overthrowe of the children of Israell by the infydelles and uncircumcised. In like sorte we have confirmacion in diverse prophane discourses of such as have yelded the ghoste in a traunce of unreasonable joye and lawghinge; as Dyagore Rhodiotto, and the philosopher Chilon, who, upon the newes that their children had won the prise at the plaies at Olympus, embrased their happye fortune with such exceding gladnes, that, upon the place and present,

DISCOURSE II

they yelded againe their tearme of borowed yeres. Also a folyshe Romaine woman, hearing of the death of her son in a battaile fought against th' ennemy, disgested it with great constancy, but seing his safe retorne from the field, contrary to her expectacion and former newes, she was so assailed with superfluity of gladnes, that, in place to congratulate his deliverye from the perill of war, she dyed in embrasing hym, as of a passion of dismeasured contentment. Which argueth sufficiently the folly of them that in any degre bestowe eyther joye or sorowe so neare their harte, that, besydes the destruction of the body, they become th' unnatural morderers of their owne soules. Wherin, with what enamel so ever they seke to guild and colour such vices, yet can they not be excused of an humor of madnes, proceding of a vaine braine, exposing frutes according to the spirit or guide that possesseth them. Neyther is ther any commendacion at al due unto such as throwe ympacience give ende to their lyfe by dispaire, with what title or sorname of constancy the fond philosophers of olde time do baptyse those accions of meare fury and frenecy. Wherof, as the miserable ende of these ii lovers yeldes sufficient testymonie, dieng both in one hower of diverse accidents, the one of a dismeasured joye the other of a passion of desperatte sorowe ; so, bicause the discourse is of undoubted truth, I wishe it might move credyt to the reader, and councell to al men to eschew the like inconvenience deriyved of semblable occasion.

AT such tyme as Alexander the sixt, surnamed Borgia, supplied the papistical seate at Rome, dwelt in Sysenna a yong gentleman called Lyvyo, with his syster Cornelia: neare unto whome was the house of a knight bering the name of Renaldo, having a son called Clawdio, with a daughter Camylla: which two yong dameselles, by reason of neighborehead, and contynuall norryture together duringe their infancye, reteyned a league of suche mutuall famylyaritie and conversacion, that their socyetye, with often entercourse together, seamed no lesse

then if nature had made theym the children of one father. Wherein, as Renaldo and his wife rejoysed not a litle on behalfe of their doughter, for that Cornelia was accompted to excede the rest of yonge ladies in honest behaviour and gyftes of vertue; so, if it had not bene for a froward disposition in Clawdio (who grudged without cause the companye of Lyvyo), this conversacion and haunt of the girles had seamed of easyer contynuance. Albeit as his presence often gave ympedimente to their metinge, so his absence restored their enterviewe; in such sorte as he was no soner departed to parforme his fathers affaires at Rome, or els where, but hys syster forgat not to visit her deare Cornelia; passinge theyr pettie follyes, and recreacions of honest delyte, most commonly at the lodginge of Lyvyo, for that there was neither awe of father nor other authoritie to controll their exercise: which, for the most part, was every afternone to dresse fyne banquettes, striving to excede one an other in curiositye and conning, with a thousande other conceytes and merye chat of huswiferie; which seamed of no lesse pleasure to theim then the pomppe of wanton delytes, wherewith princes and other great ladies are respected, served, and honored, and sometime courted, by a crew of veneryan and carpet knights, with divers ymportunyties and unseamely requests of love: who, as he is an humor of infection derived of the corrupt partes in our selves, and yet common to us all by nature, so is he chiefly furthered in th' execution of his evil by an usuall frequentacion and hawnte of parties. Whereof may bee noted a moste familyar experience in this Lyvio, who, during the practis of the two girles, toke such viewe of the bewtie and behaviour of Camilla (seing her only go and come to the chamber of his syster) that he began to sipp of the cuppe of affection, no lesse then Dido kyssing Cupido under the figure and semblance of the litle Ascanius, son to the valiant Eneas. Neyther coulde he be so constant to repulse this first apprehension; but (maugre his hart) he yelded to the somonce of his affection, and, at the first assalt, surrendred the fortresse to him that offred the warr. Who, at the first entry, made himselfe lord over the free partes of this prisoner, and rampired himselfe so strongly

Love is an humor of infection derived of the corrupte partes in our selves.

Love.

DISCOURSE II

within th'interiour of his mynd, that he was not onely in one instante the governour of his thoughtes, but also, directing his whole doings by the diall of his descretion, fedd hym onely wyth the unsaverye jewice of tormente and contynuall passion; in suche sorte as, not knowinge whether hee shoulde encounter a retorne of reciprocall glee, hee seamed to love uppon credytte, takinge pleasure in interteyninge his uncerteyne thoughts, and vaine delite of his flatteryng fancy. Wherein, he had hadde some reason, if the conference of Camilla had kindled the coles of this affection in his mind (for that, as I have sayde, frequentacion bredeth first the desyer, so wordes have force to further th'effecte of diverse thynges whiche otherwaies we colde never bringe to passe) or if he had bene aunswerd with a *sympathia*, or equalitie of frendshipp, by her on whose behalfe he comytted such fond ydolatrye. But what? when a man hath once set a broch the humor of his follie, he accomptes it a great symplicitie to desist afore he hath performed every effecte and suggestion of the blynde guide that governeth his unrulye wil. For this yonge pigeon of the first plume, hatching in the secret of his mind that whiche he durst not discover, toke singler pleasure in the repetycion of the delite which he desiered; ymagining that Camilla had cropped of the same herbe whereof hee had swallowed bothe the leafe and roote, and that shee was no lesse zelous on his behalfe, then he the slave forced and enchanted by the vertue of her glisteringe beawtie. Wherein, as deserte and solytarie soyles bee harbors moste convenyente for such as be occupied wyth passion, so hee beganne by lytle and litle to disclayme all companye and places of assemblie, and accompted his greatest felycitie to discourse with his thoughtes in the open and barraine feldes; wher onely the ayre did witnes his dollor and the birdes partakers of hys hollowe sighes. Wherin, walkyng one day (amonge the rest) along a coppies, or grove of short wode, norished by the moisture of two or thre pleasante chanelles, distilling from certeyne rockes builded by nature upon the hight of the mounteynes, whych favoured his dolful complainte with an eccho of semblable dule, he exposed an effect of his passion in these sorowfull termes:—

Words have force to further the effecte of anye thinge.

Desert soyles be harbors mete for solitary persons.

'What angrye dome of the godds or sinyster permission of the fates is this' (sayth he) 'which, deprivyng my harte of his auncyente lybertie, hath made a transport of my thoughtes upon the ymage of a beawtie that resembleth the clearenes of the heavens, and eclipsethe what soever is perfecte or fayre uppon earthe? From whence procedes thys newe authorytye, whyche, commaunding the strongeste parte in me, seameth to force a desier to wishe that wherof myne eyes have alreadie given judgement touchinge the bewtye of th' onely mistres of my thoughtes? What soddaine alteration is this to transforme my libertie into a servile thraldome, and yet of more delite and contentement then if I were pronounced th' onely soveraine and lord of the whole patrymonie? Alas! I thinke th' accidente, excedynge the compasse or computacion of nature, ympartes his power and title with the celestial authorityes above; for myne eyes do daylye fede upon the presence of Camylla and encountreth a contynuall viewe of her companye. But the true effecte of that whiche is parfecte, under the corporal vaile can not bee discerned but by figure and force of ymagynacion; the which, ravishinge my sences, hath made me the slave of her, who, livynge without subjection or touch of passion, may, peradventure, converte the symptomes of my presente greefe into a conceyte of litle or no regarde, wyth a disdayne of th' offer of my affection. To what ende sholde I endevor to gather the frute, when the leaves will graunte me no favour; or who will bende his devocion towardes the shryne, if the sainte close the gates of compassion agaynste him? In like sorte, what pleasure have I to embrase a shadowe, when the bodye disdaineth my homage and offer of service; oneles there be a felycitie in the life of the Cameleon, livinge with the breath or ayre of the skies? For, in fearinge to discover my grefe, I have cause to dispaire of the remedie; and in fedinge onely uppon vaine and uncertaine ymaginacions, I am to expecte no other contentment but such as distilleth from the fountayne of such simple favours, that now I find theim the happiest kinde of creatures to whom nature hath ymparted such rude shappe and grosse understandynge, that they can not in any sorte receave th' impressions of love;

The complainte of Lyvyo.

The Cameleon is norished by the breath of the ayre.

DISCOURSE II

where we, alas! that are derived of a more delicate molde, and enjoyned to a generositye of spirite above the reste, are barred the benefyt of all felycitie, in admittinge as a principall pleasure the thing which tormentes us more mortallie then if we were persecuted with all th'afflictions of the worlde. Herein appeares the folye and wante of discretion in man, doatinge upon the vanities and passions whiche of hymself hee plantes in hymselfe, without foreseinge howe unhable hee is to restore his quiete after hee bee once attainted with the humour of suche corruption. But what? may any one man be assisted with speciall privilege in that which nature hath made common to us all? I meane, is it in the power of any to procure dispence from the daunger of love, or staye the coles kindled in our intrailes to burst into blase or open flame? No! no! for a million that have fallen into the snares and perils of affection, I have not knowen anye one that hath disposed of hymselfe and thoughtes other wayes then accordynge to the discretion of hym that sekes to mortifye our quiet and triumphe in the servilitye of us wretches. Yet, for my parte, seinge there is no evill in embrasing things that be faire,—for that (according to th' oratour) the faire and good are so conjoyned together, that, the one glorifyenge in the other, are confirmed both with equal estimacion—why shoulde I not pursue the love of my deare Camilla; whose exterior regardes argew a greater vertue then to refuse the offer of my simple and honest service, supported with an intente of unfayned loyaltie so longe as nature shall assiste me with one moment of tyme in this worlde? But, alas! what reason hath she to graunte to that whiche I dare not demaunde; or howe shoulde she satisfye my requeste beinge altogether ignoraunte of my meaninge? And seynge by conceylinge my desyer, my greefe is growen to an agravacion of torment, why staye I to disclose the cause; to the ende I maye eyther receyve the soveraine *Cataplame* for my sore, or els the laste and fatall syroppe whiche maye sende me to complaine mine evill in the other worlde?' Wherin, as he made here his plat to communicate his love with his mistres, so the veray presence of Camilla, and fear to offende her, toke

Cicero.

awaye th' effect of that resolucion, convertinge his complot into a misterie of some dreame or vision invisible. Where- by, what with the increase of his passion and feare to bewraye th' occasion, his greefe grewe to a disease, present- ynge argumentes of debilitye and diminution of strength, with lose of auncient colour in his face; so far furth, that he seamed not the same Lyvio which earst was so welcome into all companies, no lesse for hys grace and perfection of nature then his guifte of pleasante discourse: seinge that, nowe, in so shorte a tyme, he is so transposed into the habite and disposition of a malencolike and solitarie harmit, that there appeared no lesse impossibilitie to have hym assiste any assemblye, accordynge to the commendable custome of nobilitie, or youth of gentle discente, thorowe all the fran- chises in Italy, then to mortifye in one instante the furye of his solitary passion; in suche sort that the young ladyes and gentlewomen, companyons to his syster, began to de- skande of his coye and religious trade of lyfe. Some of theim, accusinge hym of folishe disdaine, noted a sorte of savage and hagarde disposition; and some, seinge as fare into his disease as the phizicion into his water, referred the cause of this soddaine chaunge to the mortall and inevitable woundes of the cruell son of the faire Cypris. Wherwith Cornelia, troubled withoute measure that the alteracion of her brother was the onely wonder of the multitude, grevyng no lesse, for her parte, then the rest seamed amazed, accoasted hym one mournyng in a close arbore or alleye of his gardin, where he was recording his amarous conceits, and disposed herselfe t' understande the cause under these termes:—'I hope sayeth she my present commyng (excedyng my ordin- ary custome) will not move you to conceytes of presumption against me; chiefly for that I desier to communicate with you in that which yourself ought to disclose to such as are deare unto you, to th' ende that, if the meane to restore you consiste in straungers, the remedie may folow with expedi- cion. But if a sleighte salve may cure a slender sore, and that your greefe is of no other consequence then a passion of ymaginations, why do you not take up the vaine that fedes the humour of such fonde conceites, and of yourselfe

DISCOURSE II

Cornelya to her brother.

DISCOURSE II

dismisse the darke cloudes of your troubled fansie? For, I assure you, the shame whiche I have on the behalfe of your doing is nothyng inferiour to the panges you feele; chiefly for that your solemne trade of life, ringing in mine eares by a general reaporte of all men, makes me not only refuse diverse assemblies whiche I ought to visite, but also loathe the companie of my deare companions, who forget not to reproche me with imputacion of our change; protesting unto you, that, if you confirme it with any longer time, I wyl also assiste your solitarie trade, and kepe my selfe so recluse, that, in forbearing to visite my frends abroade, I will also forbid th' access of any at home. For what delit do I fynde in any companye, when al degrees salute me with your desolate order of livyng? And judge you what pleasure I take, that earst did glory with the best in the behavior of my brother, most welcome above all men to every estate, and now to heare you loaden with titles and surnames of "proude," "disdainful," "ful of fancies," with a thousand other imposicions of like reproch. Wherfore, for end, if ther remaine in you any care of your owne estimation, or respecte to content me, I besech you eftesones sticke not with me in so small a sute as the discoverie of the cause and circumstaunce of your annoye; assuring you for my part, by the vertue of our parents decessed, that my life shal refuse no perill to remove your distres, and that with no lesse good will then I desier with my harte a spedie conversion of your malencolike countenance into regardes of auncient joye; imparting by that meanes an universal gladnes to al your frends, who are driven to participat with you in sorowe, til they see a restauracion of your former quiet.' Wherwith Lyvio, takyng th' advauntage of th' affected zeale of his syster, who gave him assuraunce of her promisse in that whiche he durste not demaunde, knewe not at the firste what replye to preferre, but that it was not against nature 'for a man to flitt from happye lyfe to heavye state.'

The answer of Lyvyo to his sister.

'Neyther oughte it,' sayth he, 'to seame a wonder to the people, when we expose alteracion of complexion. For suche are equall to angels, or semblable to the brutall sorte with out sence, that are priviledged from passion, or can kepe so

temperate a meane in receyvyng and disgestyng th' accidentes of this worlde; which, accordynge th' occurrance and evenementes of tymes, do expose argumentes of mirthe or sorowe in the faces of them whome they possesse. And, albeit, I confesse unto you, that as he beares his miserie beste that hides it moste, so suche are worthye to have the name of perfecte men, who, enconteringe their disaster with a constante magnanimitye of minde, do dissimule their greefe afore the worlde, to th' ende they only may give remedye to that which is common to none but theymselves. Wherin, for my parte, I coulde never enjoye a participation of suche perfection: neyther is th' occasion of my extremitie so easely covered, but the drouping regardes in my face are readie to make declaration of my torment. Besides I have no greate cause of shame of mine evill, consideringe the same importes an enterprise of noble consequence: albeit, I make some conscience to discover the principall cause. But considering the roundnes of your offer, and howe boldly one of us maye participat wyth an other, I am contente to imparte with you the circumstance of my passion. Wherin, as you have charged me with chaunge and alteracion of countenance, debilitie, and diminucion of the strongest partes in me, with a savage and hagarde order of livynge, as you have tearmed it; so, in understandynge the cause, I hope you wyl excuse me of effectes of other folly then suche as nature hath enjoyned in generalitie to all men. And to cut of your suspence, and absolve your troubled mynde of all doubte, you shall understande that the force of love (depriving mine auncient lyberty) hath also transposed my former quiet and solace of mynde into these mournynge and pynynge regardes whiche you note in me: neyther can I be restored to the state whiche you wishe, without the assuraunce of that which I desier, whiche is the good wyll of her to whome love hath begiven so large power over me. And as every medecine is measured by the greatnes of the disease, and the lyght hurte is easelye healed, without tryinge the exquisite skill of the phisicion; so my gréefe, beinge grounded upon great consequence, doth not onely assaile me with all sortes of passions and panges of

He bearethe his misery beste that hideth it most.

DISCOURSE II

sorowe; but also denyeth to brooke the operacion of other remedie but suche as is distilled from the earbe that firste infected me. It is not the offer of smal harmes that makes me so hurtefull to myself and hateful to my frendes, nor the subject of tryflynge annoye that sturres up theis sighes and solytarie disposition in me, it is alas! for beautye herselfe that I suffer. Eye! the veray patterne and goddesse of all perfection, hath made me so forgetfull of myselfe, that I seame a straunger to my deare frendes. Neyther have I other power of myselfe then suche as is imparted unto me by her whose picture I cary so lyvely in my mynde.' Cornelia, altogether ignorant in the force of affection, and by reason of the gréenes of her yeres voyed of experience in tournynge over the volumes of love, coulde not but smyle for the firste at the jargon, or discourse, of her brother. Albeit, notinge his perplexitie, she let fall also certaine teares on the behalfe of his desolate state. And seynge hym wholly converted into contemplation of a vision, judged it an effecte of pitye to gyve ayde to his distresse. Whereupon, she desiered eftsones, in mery sorte, to knowe the goddesse of his devocions, 'to the ende,' sayth she, 'that I may yelde her honor for youre sake; and, seinge you dare not presente her your requeste, I maye enter into the office of an intercessour, and praye for your delyverye. Neyther nede you doubte to disclose her to me, nor dispayre of my dilygence and readye indevour to do you good; onles you be so farre spente wyth jalous passion that you feare I wyll ravishe her from you, or prevente the desier of your pleasure in beinge in love with her myself, you abuse the loyaltye of my meaning, and I doe wronge to exacte so farre upon your secret imagination.' 'I am contente,' sayth he, 'you jeste and take pleasure in the evill whiche I suffer, so that you will performe the effecte of your promisse: whiche you maye the rather accomplishe, by the credit you have with her who is the onely cause of my tormente.' Whereof, after she had given hym a seconde assurance by othe and protestation of faythe, he tolde her (not without a freshe supplie of sorowe) that it was Camilla to whom his libertie was captife; and in the ballance of whose compassion wayghed indifferently

the lycence of longer life or sentence diffinitive of presente death; desierynge her, for ende, to make her privie to the paine he indured; and with all to procure spedie moderacion of his gréefe, or els to awarde the writte of fatall somonce to hym that is not hable to feede the vaine of lyfe without the foode of her speciall favour. The gyrle, delityng still in the amarous discourse of her brother, willed hym to take harte at grasse, and, makynge exchaunge of his solytarie order, to awake out of his dreame of dompes, and revoke his disposition of auncient cherefulnes; leaste his mistres, loathing his thyn and wearishe lookes, be affraide to graunt love to a stoane, or suffer herselfe to be embrased by one in whome is neither present delite nor likelihod of future pleasur. 'Ah! sister,' saith hee, 'how your libertie of tounge argueth your small experience in cases of love, whose delites consiste in teares, sighes, and dolorous complaintes. Wherin, as suche as be moste constante of all make declaration also of effecte of suche loyaltie, in takinge pleasure to recorde their sorowe with tunes of lamentable note; so, in exposinge the contrarie, we discover at unwares the slender affection we beare to the thynge we desier. And, for my parte, I fele no lesse pleasure by ymagination, when I see with the eyes of my mynde the beautie and other perfections of my deare Camilla, then you whiche never tasted of the apprehension of this frée constrainte whiche the destenie of love hath appointed to attend upon me.' 'I am glad,' saith she, 'to be warned in this sorte to eschewe the lyke evill in myselfe, and sorie to note the experience of so great an inconvenience in you; but, seing you are so sewerly rampired in your folye, that th' offer of perswasion is hatefull unto you, I am contente you feede upon suche ease as you finde, and take pleasure in the simple contemplacion of the ymage of your saint. For, for my parte, I had rather have an hower of reste, disposinge myselfe to slepe as sone as my head and the pillow be met, then lye with mine armes of crosse, regardynge the course of the starres, and builde castelles in the ayre, or be troubled in dremyng of the dissolution of the worlde, and then to baptise suche impediments and enemies of reste by the name of "the

DISCOURSE II

pleasures of loyall lovers," with addition that it is a peculiar glorie gyven them from above by the invisible goddesse. It is a pore repaste, God knoweth, for an emptie stomake to feede only of wishes, and satisfye his thurste with drinkinge of an emptie cuppe, or restore heate to the benommed partes by a cold chymney, or satisfye the desieringe minde with simple contemplacions.' Wherewith she retired, with intent to trye the nexte daye whether Camylla had any vaine that stretched to satisfye the desier of her brother; whome she lefte with more argument of consolation then afore, by reason of the hope he reaposed in her diligence. Here was a double offence in Livio, both to force his syster to an enterprise indecent for her honor and age, and also to prefer her to be the *Darioletta* of his love; opening (as it were) the way of voluptuous pleasure to al youth, the whiche is to much enclined that way, by the corruption of our own nature, without that we nede th' assistance of art to supplie our defaultes in so unhonest an exercise. Albeit our blindnes is so great in things of such foly, that (in respectinge only the present) we never feare the fal of future inconvenience, til, being served with the writ of present penance, we finde to lytle leasure to repente so greate offences. And albeit (accordyng to Aristotle) it is necessarie to be privie to th' imperfections in the world, and to knowe som tyme wherin we offende, yet gives he this councell with al, that we converte the experience of suche synister encounters to a peculiar defense of ourselves againste th' assaultes of semblable accidentes; and not to use it as an authoritie or priviledge to justifie our wickednes, or consume oure tyme in the ymitation of evill. Wherein, as the good men are defended by their vertue, so let the worser sorte be ware by so manye millions of examples as our unhappie age, at this present, is hable to furnishe in the like affaires. And so to our historie. The morow after this discourse betwen the dolorous Lyvio and his syster, it chaunced that the doughter of Renaldo came all alone to see her companyon Cornelia; who, albeit, was sufficiently mindefull of her promisse, yet was she furthered with a fit occasion by Camylla. For that, after certaine litle devises betwene

It is necessary to knowe the imperfections of the worlde.

them, she asked the cause of the sodaine chaunge and alteracion in her brother, and why he was no more seene to assiste the honeste assemblies in masque or other sorte. To whome Cornelia aunswered, that as she was of equall desyer to knowe th' occasion of his solitarie absence, so, grevynge above the reste with his pyning estate, 'I have asked' (saith she) 'the cause of his greefe; which, with the circunstance and effecte of all his annoye, procedes from you, my deare frende and companyon, as one in whome is norished the care and travaile of mynde of my sorowfull brother.' 'Howe is it possible,' saith the simple Camilla, 'that I should worke hym any wo; seinge hitherunto I have bene no lesse careful of his wel doing then curious of mine owne health; neither have I saide or don the thing (I am sewer) wherein was any pointe of evil meanynge towardes hym, onlesse he make construction of my simple and honest zeale: like as also I woulde be sorie to be the author of his miscontentement any waye?' 'The present passion of my brother,' saith Cornelia, 'is derived of a contrarie cause: for the to much delite and pleasure he hathe taken in seinge you hathe broughte hym to the brinke of this bane; and yet, as they wryte of the Scorpion, hee hopeth to drawe the remedye frome her that hath geven him the wounde.' 'Yf you make not a more plaine exposition of youre darke texte,' sayeth Camilla, 'I shall hardlye reade the misterye of youre readle, for as yet I understande nothinge but highe Duche.' 'Eye marye!' sayeth th' other, 'and therein consisteth the chiefeste cause of my greefe; for if the peculyar affection of my brother were comon also to you, or that you enjoyed but a simple perticipacion of his annoye, you shoulde not onlye understande that which I am driven to unfolde, but be as readie to geve the remedie, as hee hathe reason in the meanewhile to suffer the grefe, or I ashamed to be the messenger.' 'Do awaye this philosophie, my deare frende,' saythe Camilla, 'and cutte of at laste my doubtfull suspence touchinge your meanynge; for if th'uttermoste of that whiche is in me maye stande hym in steade, I will eyther performe the full of your demaunde, or at least yelde you such reason to the contrarye, that you shal be voyde of

DISCOURSE II

just cause to complaine of myne aunswere.' Here Cornelia tolde her that th' origynall of her brother's evill proceded of a wonderfull vehemencye of love he bare to her; with addicion that if she yelded hym not the hyer of his zeale wyth a counterchaunge of affection, she shoulde see in shorte tyme the ende of his lyfe, no lesse desperatelye then in secrete sorowe hee consumeth the beste of his age in the loyall servitude he hath alreadie vowed on her behalfe. 'And, for my parte,' sayeth shee (not without some teares), 'as the violence of his passion, only knowen unto me, hathe forced me to stande here th' unseamely solycitor of his cause; so, if it be a vertue to expose compassion uppon th' afflicted, lette the respecte of my dystresse sturre uppe an increase of pitie in you to ayde the desolation of my carefull brother. Beholde! my Camilla, the circumstance of my presente extremitie; and ymagyn that wyth the losse of my brother dekaieth the onely proppe and pillor of my lyfe. And yet, simple girle that I am, voide of experience in such affayres, lo! here I am constrayned to builde requestes no lesse inconvenient to my estate then unseamelye for my yeares. Albeit for my purgacion towardes you, I hope the lawe of nature, and love of the syster towardes her brother, will excuse this diligence and indevor which I use to preserve the life of him whom I holde no lesse deare then the tendrest parte of myne eye.' Wherwith Camilla not without argumentes of some litle femynine anger staide her furthur discourse with this aunswere:—'Who wolde have thought,' sayeth she, 'that a gentlewoman of your qualytie and callinge wolde have exceded the lymittes of her estymacion, so farr as, for the respecte of the folishe appetit of a yonge man, to discharge the parte of a shameles messenger, in a case no lesse unworthie for your honour then contrarye to me to whom th' imbassage is dressed? Arte thou so credulus in the constancie of men (myne own Cornelia) that thou wilte repose good earnest in that wherin they take pleasure to dissemble? Or arte thou of opynion that as often as the jolytie of fraile youth do prefarre sighes, and traunces, with other dollorous regardes, painted by dissymuled pollicie in the forefront of their faces, that it

Teares the true messengers of the dollor of the harte.

is true love that possesseth theym, or honeste desier that moveth their dule? Nothinge lesse; for teares for the moste parte are the true messengers of the dollour of the harte, and oughte chieflye to move compassion, yet in cases of love they bee but suborned signes and declaracions of wanton desier, and for that cause oughte not to receive other meede thenne their meanynge dothe meritte; seynge wythall that the desierous mynde groundes his pretence moste commonlye uppon the thynge whyche vertue canne not brooke, and reason denieth to graunte. And admitt it bee a follie peculyar to many, and a passion ymparted to all men by nature, to follow th' instinct of love, what grudge of conscience, I praie you, is it to a maide to suffer her vaine lover to pyne uppon creaditte, soo that shee stande so surelye uppon the garde of her chastetie, that shee be not seduced wyth his flatterynge charmes? It is not in our power to lette theym to love: onlye we oughte to be carefull of our honour, and shon th' infection, leaste we become unhappye afore the tyme. Besydes, howe greatlye shoulde wee abuse oure dutie and obedience towardes oure parentes, in passinge a graunte of oure good will wythoute their consente, whyche onely oughte to directe us in any sorte whatsoever. No! no! lett theym lamente, and measure their mournynge at what intereste they thinke good, the same shall not staie the course of my sleepe, neither shal their teares eclips the least moment of my pleasure and contentmente; for, when all is sayde, wee ought to conster the meaninge of these fayned sorowes to none other ende but as privie baites to entangle the simple and delicate youthe of us women. For when we ymparte compassion to their doleful alarams, and makes theym the maysters of their desiers, God knoweth the reward we fynde and how sone they laughe at oure fragilitie; and, takinge pleasure to see us in passion, do leave us pore wretches to the hyer of oure follie. So if Lyvio have ymagyned a bargaine of love, lett hym make muche of his owne conceite, and embrace the shadowe of his fansie; for, for my parte, it shal suffice me to be armed with resistaunce, and that I am voide of desier to encownter him or any other in that sort. Wherwith, contenting my selfe with the honest

DISCOURSE II

amytie betwene you and me, my deare Cornelia, I conjure you by the vertue of the same, to give over the pursute of this quest, seinge that, besides the losse of tyme, and slender proffit you are like to reape of your travaile, you shal also lose a companion of me, with small commendation to yourselfe in courtinge the gestes that hawnte your howse with requestes of suche unseamelye effecte.' Whyche laste resolution stucke greatly on the stomake of Cornelia, for that the disdainefull repulse of her companion argued a dispaire hereafter to ease the distresses of her brother. But chieflie she greved in that Camylla seamed to enter into synister conceites against her: whiche, with an honest shame of that whiche was alreadie passed her mouthe, and feare any more to offende that waye, together with her ignorance in the ordynarie replies of suche as have taken degrees in the skoole of love, made her prefarre her excuse in simple sorte, with promise here after to disclayme th' enterprise. And blamynge whollie th' ymportunytie of her brother, desiered, notwithstandinge, her Camilla not to discontynue her custome of repaire to her lodginge. Whereunto shee condiscended, and retired to the pallais of her father leaving Cornelia in disputation with herselfe what aunswere to forge to her desolate brother. Who, as sone as he understode of the retire of his mistres, addresed him to his syster; whom, because he sawe in the attire of sorow—I meane, her eyes bathed in the teares of her late repulse—he gave judgement ymediatlie uppon the case, with firme prerswacion that Camilla did not onely denie his requeste, but also misliked wyth the messenger in performing her promisse. The force of which conceites drave him into a passion of alterations and change of collour, not without some argumente of mortall perill to his person, afore he demaunded to heare the aunswere; whiche, being not unmarked of the girle, she prevented th' offer of further daunger, with a contrary of that which Camilla tolde her; and, for feare of further inconvenience by hys soddayne traunce, declared unto him, that, albeit his mistres was not so quick of consent as his extremetie required, yet her hart was not so hard frozen but there were meanes to thawe it; neyther was her aunswere without hope, although at the

firste she seamed to objecte the disloyalety and ordenarye ficcyon of men: willinge hym, for the rest, to abandon dispaire, and arminge himselfe with corage, to dysmisse his solytarie and savage order of lyfe. Wherin, for a more increase of uncerteyne consolation, she tolde him that, albeit it was as yet but the foremone, and that he had no reason to advaunce hymselfe so farre as to crave mutuall conferrence, yet he nede not forbeare to write to her, and that, wyth the consente of tyme and place, she woulde deliver the letter, wyth indevor to bringe her last resolution. Wherwith, albeit shee seamed only to feede the tyme, with intente to make hym discontynue his fancies, attempting notwithstandinge a wonderfull ympossibilitie; for that hee was so stalled in his amarus golphe, that al the pilottes belonginge to the infynit galies of Venice lackt force to hale hym out; yet seamed she thereby to breathe an ayre of freshe comfort into all the partes of her languishinge brother, who, likinge her advise, determyned to put her councell in execution. Wheruppon, as one of superficiall skil in writinge th' Ytalyan verse, he composed a certeine *elegie*, conteynynge the some of his sorowe and substance of his request. Whereof, because I have not the true copie, I leave it to the judgemente of theim that have redd it; but thus much I presume of his sorowe, that he did not ende his epistle without an infynitie of teares, ympartinge the waterie dewe of the same on diverse partes of the paper, to th'ende the same mighte argue to his ladie the dollor of his passion that governed him duringe the tyme of that contemplacion. Which approved sufficientlye his follie, wyth declaracion howe well they be beguenned that be coyffed wyth a nighte capp of such stoofe as wrapped the emptie heade of our Lyvyo; who failed not the nexte daye to delyver his tragicall letter to his syster, with great charge of expedicion in presenting it to his mistres. Cornelia here was doble passioned, both to see her brother persever in his follie, without intermission of tormente, and also that shee was forced to performe a seconde embassage to her whose companie and frendshippe shee was sewer to abandon for ever, if she added newe tearmes to her former requeste. But if she had bene as wel seene in the subtilities

DISCOURSE II

of love, as she seamed moste simple in experience in that arte, she woulde have considered, that what angrie clowdes soever appeare in the face of women, yet take they a singuler pleasure to be courted, and are not so angrie indeede as their countenance doth argue, when their servauntes do visit theim with letters of humylitie. And differringe, in this sorte, certeine dayes the delyverie of the letter; fearinge that whych happened—that yf Camilla refused to performe th' effecte, the daunger of her brother colde be no lesse then, either presente death by despaire, or at the leaste to enter in some mortall sicknes; yet, beinge pressed with his contynuall ymportunyties, the pore girle determyned to trye the forde, and sounde eftesones the harte of Camilla, who (as it chaunced) came the same after none to see Cornelia. Wher, after they had made an experience of their skil in a banquet of curious confections, Cornelia not unmindful of the disease of her brother, and seing th' offer of oportunitie, for that the place was voide of ympedimente of companie savinge the two girles, drewe the letter out of her poket, and, with a smilinge regarde, entermedled with honeste shame, gave it to Camilla, desieringe her to reade it, and judge what bee the follies of lovers. Camilla, ymagynynge by and by from what parte th' imbassage was sente, tolde her in sorte of pleasante anger, that as she was not ignorante in the meanyng of that misterie, and that if it were not more for the respecte of the bringer then disier to contente hym that sente it, and that she was passed the feare of any charme conteyned in the same, shee woulde committe it to a thousande morselles in her presence; so, if the readinge broughte cause of miscontentemente, she gave her assurance to performe th' uttermoste of her former promisse. Cornelia alledged ignoraunce in the matter. 'Only,' sayth she, 'I can thus far assure you that I have not in charge to presente you wyth letter or message from any man; for, as I founde it this morninge uppon the steares goinge oute of my chamber, so I hope you will neither enjoyne me blame nor penaunce for the falte wherin myne ynnocencye is sufficiente to cleare me.' 'Well! well!' sayeth Camilla, 'I will not sticke to give you the readinge of these amarus lynes, arguinge as small pleasure to

hym as that write theim as evill received of me to whom they are dressed.' Wherwith she opened the pacquett, and redd the roll from th' one ende to th' other. Wherin, albeit she discovered in her face a singler pleasure, begynning even nowe to fele the mocions of love with in her tender breast, and taste of the appetit of a desier which she durst not satisfy, yet, using her accustomed wisedome in conceylinge that she desired moste, she covered the suspicion of affection with certeine tearmes of reproche, which she bestowed upon her simple companion in this sort:—'I finde nowe,' sayeth shee, 'that my pacience and facilitie in hearynge your reaportes do yelde you to muche favor in furtheringe your fonde practise; which you nede not go about to coollour with other enamell then the complection of your owne nature, seinge that she wyth whom you have to do, can spie a flee in the milke, and give judgemente of th' intente of these baites, wyth th' effecte of your meanyng; desiering you (for preventyng a further inconvenience in your brother) to seke to cure his disease as you may, leaste, in contynuyinge his follie, hee further a subvercion of that which is the beste parte in him. For he hathe alreadye of me as much as he may hope for with assurance. And, for your part, as you seame to reappose neither religion nor vertue in promisses—for that the laste tyme we weare in tearmes of these follies, you gave me assurance to discontinue th' enterprise—so that it is I that am readie to give punyshmente to mine owne indiscretion, and endure the penance of mine owne rashenes, in deprivinge me of the companie wherin I tooke moste pleasure and contentmente, biddinge you farewell till better occasions maye restore oure famyliar visitacions.' Wherwith she put no difference betwen doing and sayinge, fearing that if she had attended the replie of Cornelia, she had bene in daunger to yelde to the bargaine, in openynge her eares to wide to the perswacions of her companion; whome she left no lesse astonied then her selfe traunsed and full of diverse ymagynacions, beginnyng even then to measure th' affection of Livio, and give judgement of his loyaltie by the contynuacion and vehemencie of his passion, with absolute resolucion (for al

DISCOURSE II

her dissymuled disdayne) to change purpose and admitt the offer of his frendshippe, if she were eftsones required by hym or any in his behalfe; blamyng her rashenes in reprochyinge hys syster, and crueltie more thenne conveniente to her brother, who beganne even nowe to take possession of her thoughtes, and make hym selfe a secrete mediator in his owne cause. Wherein, sewerly, may be noted in experience of the fragilitie and inconstante disposition of man, and specially in th' affaires of love; seynge that she whiche earste detested everye waye to be pertaker of suche ympression, is nowe chaunged in a momente, and broughte to laie her heade under the yoke of servile affection, makinge (as it were) a simple and plaine table of her harte, to th' ende to drawe thereupon a forme of thoughtes and ymagynacions in diverse collours, according to the direction of hym that thus hath gott the governement of her libertie with authoritie to dispose of her as hee thinkes good. And yet I cannot but allowe her longe delaie, and judge her of greate wisdome to suspende her consente till she had wel considered of the matter, seinge the dailie inconveniences happeninge to suche as, neyther carefull of their honor, nor curious of their quiet, do admit indescretly the bargaine at the fyrste offer, without knowinge the merite of the persones, or examynynge the circumstanceye of the future sequeile of theyr love. Wherof are derived so many examples of a nomber of miserable men endinge their lives by unhappie dispaire, whose wretchednes ought to warne us to delibrate at large afore we put in execution, and to use a reasonable meane in our doinge: I meane, not to ron hedlonge into the golphe of affection, leaste our daunger be equall to the peryl of the infortunate Acarestryans; who, because they were disfavored of their ladyes, entered into such conceites of mortall grefe, that, when they would willinglie have retired and bene delivered, it was eyther ympossible or at least veraie hard to give theym remedy. To whych crew of desperate lovers we may wel add the desaster of thys Livio; who, assured of th' aunswere of his ladie, as well by hys sister, as also by the regards of disdayne he noted in her farewell when she departed (whereof he was partaker by

shrowdinge hymselfe in a secrette corner of the chamber duringe the perley of the two maydes) fel ymedyatelye into so strange a sickenes, that, abandonynge at the fyrst the desyer of slepe, wyth the appitit of the stomacke, he lefte the phizicions at th' ende of their wittes: who, beynge voyde of skill to cure hys disease, tolde hys frendes that if he woulde not receive compfort of hymself, his life was in hazarde, for that hys evill proceded onely of passions and inwarde sorowe of the harte. Wherein they had reason, seynge that the disease of love is contrarye to the disposition of all other greves. For as there is no distresse, what extremitie so ever it importe, but it maye be eyther cured or qualefied by certaine drogues and confections devised by art to compforte the stomake and restore the harte to a gladnes; so the pacient plunged in the passions of the mynde, can neyther broke th' assistance of phizicke nor operacion of hearbes; onely the presence or simple worde of hys mistres, hath more power over hys evill, then all the misticall or artificiall powders devised by the moste experte phizicions that ever cam out of th' university of Paris or Padua. Whereof th' experience apperes in this Livio; who, languishynge every daye from evill to worse, consumed by pecemeale with the force of his amarous fier (no lesse then the snow, lying upon the syde of a mountaine, yeldes and wastes with the heate of the son) which also forced such inward grefe to his sorowefull sister, together with dispaire of any meane to restore hym (for that Camilla discontinued her repaire to vysitt her) that she yelded tribute to his passion with a dysease of equall mortalitie, impartynge suche alarams of dollor thorowe all the partes of her bodye that she was constrained to kepe her bead in a litle cabynett joyninge to the lodginge of Livio; who, by the thinnes of the wall which only devided their chambers, was pertaker of the leaste worde that was spoken in the lodgynge of hys sister, whose grevous groanes, forced by the violence of a burnynge fever, gave such increase to the daunger of Livio, that he was at point to yelde to the laste alaram of life, if the sicknes of his sister had not broughte the spedye remedye of hys dysease. For Camilla, astonied without measure that

The disease of love contrary to the disposition of other grives.

DISCOURSE II

she neyther mette Cornelia at the churche, sawe her at the gate, nor wyndowe, nor any assemblye what soever, learned so much by inquisicion that she was advertised of the mortall daunger of Livio, together wyth th'extremitye of hys syster, who (yf they were not reskewed by greate merveyle) were at poynte to be shrined together at one instante in theyr fatall tombe. Here Camylla began to recante her auncient creweltye. For, in ceassynge any longer to dissimule her secrett affection to her Livio, and the sorowe shee suffered for th'affliction of hys syster, she seamed to purifie the wronge shee hadde donne to theym bothe thorowe a ryver of affected teares, distillynge by suche aboundance from her watery eyes that she seamed at the poynte to visitt the purgatorye of th'other woorlde, to doo penaunce for the twoe evilles whereof she confessed her selfe to bee th'onlye occasion. Wherein, after she hadde spente certainne howers in publicke complainte, whose dollour seamed of force to move the heavens to teares, and staye the course of the sonne, fealynge still an increase of passion by the vehemencye of love, shee was constrayned to abandon the place and performe the reste of her exclamacion agaynste her crueltie all alone in her chamber, with thys tearmes:—

The complaint of Camylla.

'What furye or force infernall is thys, whyche, shakynge the fortresse and most constante parte in me, hathe made me, in one moment, yelde to that wherin I have bene hitherto invincible? Is it possible alas! that that whyche I judged a dissembled passion in thys infortunat gentleman shoulde torne to a true effecte of undowted faith, confirmed by the power of that whiche we call love in the hartes of men? Why have not I considered that the horse whyche is of noble corage will be governed by the shadowe of a rodde, where the dull beaste is skarcely sturred with the princkyng of the spurres? The fearefull dogge dothe also barke more then bite, and depest rivers do ronne with leaste noyse. So nature hathe imparted a peculiar instinct to the noble minde, not only to be more delicate in diet, and ardante in affection, but also to embrace the objecte of their fancie with a more vehemencie of desire and passion then the rest of the rude and grosse sorte, who are not worthy to be partakers of the

misteries in true love. Ah Livio! Livio! howe doo I feele a mocion of that whych I can not tearme other wayes than a free force without constrainte, and a dollour without cause or complainte! For I am possest with an evill, wherein I take pleasure, and feeles an experience of a paine, without the which I thinke the lyfe of man can hardely be sustained. And yet my mynde wavereth in suche dredefull conceites, that I feare to make declaracion of that which bothe law of love and dutie of my conscience bindes me to expose for the solace and relyefe of thy presente affliction: but, alas! the renoume of myne honeste name is so deare unto me, that I wishe rather to embrase the extreme panges of death, then give one symple occasion of discredit to mine auncient vertue. For that as man's wisdome is hable to supplie the losses of all other thinges; so it is not only unfurnished of meanes to restore the forfait of our honestye, but also voyde of arte to cover the falte of so greate an offence. But is it a juste imputation, or worthye falte, when in our busynes wee respecte vertue, and concludes the ende of our enterpryse wyth an honeste meanynge? Ys it not a deede of compassion to gyve soccours to hym that standes in watter upp to the throte, and at the pointe to peryshe for want of help? What can we do lesses then be careful to recover hym who offereth hys lyfe in the sacrefise of affection for our sakes? Who can justly tearme our doynges by the title of offence, when we yelde a mutuall amitye to hym that pursueth our goodwill wyth a respecte and intente of lawfull mariage? No! No! Cornelia, thowe shalte not lose thy brother, nor I the companie of so deare a frende, for lacke to aunswere in reciprocal wil to him, who, with the peril of his life, conceiles the argument of hys sorow. Ah! most constant and loyall Lyvio, seyng the reputacion of myne honour denieth me accesses and conference with the, and the shame doth close my mouthe from discoverynge the secret of my good meaninge towardes the, take corage, and discharg thou th' office of a bolde soliciter to her that is no lesse reddye to grante then thou meritorious to have, and, dispoiled alreadye of all hagarde crueltie, is not onely prest to reknowledge the honour whyche thou offreste me, but also

DISCOURSE II

wholly framed to the postey and appetit of thy will. And nowe do I fele that againste the force and power of love, the strongest resistaunce is to weake, neyther is the whole worlde of sufficient strength to put to utteraunce the soldiours whome he preferreth in the feylde. Whereof, who is a more late experience then my selfe; who, earste defyinge hys malice, and nowe to attende upon the chariott of hys triumphe, and yeld me prisonner to hym, who, beyng hitherunto my bondman, hathe nowe made me the slave of his importunat requestes? And seynge the sentence is alreadye paste, and confirmed by the voice of my destynies, why do I conceile my passion in the myddest of a thousande flames whiche tormentes me within, or why do I dissemble that, I desire moste, or retire myne eyes from the view wherein they chieflye delite? Why do my feete staye to transporte thys body to the place where the harte hath already taken possession?' Wherwith she determyned the spedye consolation of Lyvio, wyth no other drogue or confection then a free consente of her love, yf the same were eftesoones demaunded. And there uppon collored her goynge to his logynge to see Cornelia; whome, as shee founde in her bedde, wyth more argumentes of deathe then apparance of lyfe, by reason of a generalle weakenes whyche hadde mortyfyed the whole strengthe of her body; so she hadde not spent many wordes in the consolation of her companion, but Livio, smellynge as it were the presence of his ladye, asked hys syster who was wyth her; who aunswered, that onely Camylla kepte her companye. Wherewith, forcing a supplie of courage in his fainte harte, with intente to knowe the fynall areste of his lyfe or death, began to plede wyth hys absent mistres in this sorte:—'Yf there be any hope in extremetye, or expectacion of helpe in mortall distresse, it is tyme nowe (good madam) to converte your auncient crueltie into an humour of compassion; both to defende yourself from th'ymputacion of a tyrant, and my lyfe from a wretched ende of miserable dispair. Ceasse hensfurthe to dissymule th'uttermost of your rigour, or drop of present grace, seinge that both the one and the other hath indiffrent power to releve my distresse, eyther by death in denieng me

Livio at the point of death speaketh to his misters.

your favour, or contynuance of longer lyfe by impartyng your specialle grace. Come! cruell misters, and see thy unfortunate Livio, without hart, hope, or argument of longer breathe; yf, by a promisse of thy good will, thou breathe not an ayre of freshe consolacion, and, by the sommaunce of thy worde, revoke my dyeng mynde from thys tombe of myserable dispaire; wherein I feele myself so tormented with th' officers of deathe, that nature, ceassyng to supplie my weary partes with force, I fynd an impossibilitie in my tonge to obey any longer the desyers of my hart.' Wherewith his breath began to drawe short, staying the course of further speche, yf not that in entryng into hys fatall traunce he exposed certeine dolefull groanes, whyche caused bothe the younge ladies to ronne in haste to the succour of the patient; whome they founde stryvinge with th' extremetie of hys laste pange, albeit not without some litle perye of breathe, whyche he seamed to reserve wyth greate difficultie. Whereuppon, Camilla, seynge a prouffe of his constancie even to the laste moment, and havynge but one meane to releve hys traunce, made no conscience to lett fall her rosye and courall lyppes uppon the mortifyed mouthe of her diynge Livio; who receyved suche present consolacion by thys offer of favor unloked for, that the force of nature and vitall strengthe, ready to depart out of every vayne of hys bodye, retired to theyr auncient places. Wherewith, he, usynge the benefytt of his fortune, forgatt not to embrase his ladye, with an infinite of kysses, whereof shee restored hym a double interest. Albeit, because he shoulde make no greate proffytt of thys soddayne courtesye, and to prevent with all a suspicion of lyghte behaviour in herself, she used her accustumed wysdome, entering into familiar conference in thys sorte:—'I hope, Seigneur Livio, you will not converte thys compassion whych I have used in the rappeale of your mortall farewell in any synister opinion of the diminucion of th' integretie of Camilla; who, as longe as she lyveth, will so stande uppon the garde of her honour and honeste renowme, that no degree shall have juste cause to reprehende the leaste favor shee extendes to any man. In whyche conceite, I am

DISCOURSE II

DISCOURSE II

also content to impart a credyt to your loyaltie, perswadynge the same to bee without fiction: whereof I am no lesse glade then I hope the love whyche youe beare me is chaste and of honest intent, respectynge an ende of sinceritie. For yf I sawe any lykelyhodd to the contrary, and that a dyse-ordinat wyll did guide your desyer and were the cause of your passion, assure your selfe I woulde make lesse conscience to committe me to the mercye of the moste horrible tourmentes in the worlde, eye! and perill of present deathe, then to leave anye parte of that whyche makes me marche without blushynge amongest the beaste of our contrey. In whyche respecte, wyth full perswacion of a sincere simplicitie in your love, I can not but retourne you a semblable favour, with absolute assuraunce from thys instaunte of such firme affection and zeale as any ladye oughte to impart to hym who seekes her frendshyppe in sorte of honeste and lawfull mariage. Neyther shall yt dekaye after th' effecte of desyer be parformed, nor dymynishe by any synister accident, untill the fatall sequestracion of our sowle and bodye. Whereof, lette us use wisdome in the conveyghe of suche affaires as maye bee taken bothe in good and evyll parte, to th' ende that the majestye of the highest beyng not offended, our honour fall not into the slaunder of the worlde. Wherein, for a first charge to bee comitted to your diligence, and withall to prefer an assured effect of the vehemencie of your affection towardes me, dispose yourself to demaunde me of my father; whose consent you shall fynde me to confirme in such sorte as yourselfe shal devise. Arme yourselfe then with compfort and retire to healthe, at the request of her, who, takynge no pleasure in solitarie regardes, wisheth you to reserve this precious flower of your youth for other exercises then to wast with passions of desperacion, no lesse enemies to the strengthe of the bodye then hurtefull to the healthe of the sowle. And seyinge, besides, that in the recovery of you consistes the healthe of your syster, suspende no longer the consolacion of her, and contentement of your selfe and me; who, in attendynge your expedicion to procure the good will of my father, will dispose myselfe in the meane while to bee thankefull unto you any

waye wherein myne honour and honestye will justifie my doynge.' Whiche laste wordes seamed of suche operation in the traunsed mynde of Livio, that, discharged (as it were) of a perillous visione in a dreame, lyfted up hys eyes and handes towardes heaven, yeldyng honour to the goddes for hys happye encounter, and, kyssynge the white and delycate hande of hys newe mystresse, he forgatt not to gyve her suche humble thankes as the greatenes of hys felicitie required; whych seamyng to hym to excede the compasse and power of fortune, judged it rather the vertue of a dyvyne miracle then an effect mortall, for that, in so soddayne a moment, he was acquited of so perentory a daunger; assuring her, that, assone as health and strengthe of body woulde assyste the desyer of his mynde, he would performe her commaundement in demaundynge her father's consent. Wherein he hoped to delay no long time, for that he felte a wonderful approche of health by the viewe of her presence in his late and laste storme of affliction. 'I wold do no lesse' (saith she) 'then yelde you soccours in so great an extremetie, both to delyver myselfe out of payne in seinge you passioned, and also to qualifye the greffe of my deare companion your syster; to whom you are also bounde in some sorte to be thankeful for my commynge hether. For albeit my conscience sommoned me to a compassion of your torment, with desier to yelde you the due hyer and consideracion of the honest love you beare me, yet the regarde of mine honour deniynge me to visite you, seamed an impediment to th' effect of that wherunto I was bounde by so many duetifull merites. Prayinge you, for ende, to excuse that whiche is past, and pardon me for the present, in that I can not assiste you with longer companye; persuadyng thyselfe (my deare Lyvio) that althoughe my bodye muste supplye another place to coullour the trafficque of our love, and prevent suspicion, yet thou haste made suche a stealth of my harte that the same will not fayle to kepe the companye in my absence.' Wherewith takynge her leave, with a chaste kysse of her servant, and frendlye farewel to Cornelia, she retireth to her father's palais, leavynge her lover well lightned of all his cares, savyng of a

DISCOURSE II

DISCOURSE II

necessarye meane to sounde the good will of the olde Reinaldo. Wherin, notwithstandynge, he used suche expedicion of diligence, that, afore hymselfe coulde enjoye the benefyt of perfect health, he procured certaine auncient gentlemen, his neare parents, to performe his requeste to th' old man; whom they solicited with suche instance and in sorte of mariage, that he admitted theyr offer, and confirmed the bargaine with theis wordes, that onely Livio shoulde be the firste that should renounce the vale. 'Albeit,' saith he, 'because of th' infirmitie of mine age, I use the consent of my son in all my affaires of importance, so I crave onely your patience in the fynall conclusion of the mariage til his retourne from Rome; at which time only yourselves shal name the day of consommation.' In this aunswere, albeit, appeared an impediment to the performance of the mariage (for that, as you have hearde, Claudio envyed the state of Livio, whiche argued a difficultie in him to approve th' allyance) yet Camilla, understanding the resolution of both their parentes, gave as sewer judgemente of the mariage, as if it had bene alredie published in the churche, and therupon began to enlarge her familiar hawnte and repaire to Livio; whom, if she embrased afore with earneste zeale, it was nothinge in respectt of the vehemencie of her present affection; which also devyded hymselfe into such a *sympathia*, and equalitie of love in theim bothe, that it spredde abrode by indiffrent braunches in bothe their hartes; like as the morninge son in the easte giveth by litle and lytle contynuall encrease to his beames, comforting the creatures uppon earth. And in this often enterviewe together, Lyvio, enjoyenge nowe his auncient health and dexteritie of body, being one day (amongest the rest) with his lady in the chamber of his syster, toke his lute, and songe a ditie whiche hee had made of their reciprocall passion, wyth suche contentemente to hys Camilla, that she desired hym eftesones to repaite it in semblable note, as wel for the delyte of the tune, which he performed with a voice to her contentacion, as also the subtill stile and fyne conveighe of the matter, arguinge a conclucion of that which they bothe wished wyth equall appitit; seinge that,

as their contynuall haunt and frequentacion together gave increase to their desyer, so they were both of opynion, that love colde not beare the title of perfecte affection, if th' effect of that whych was indiffrently wished of theim both, did not make perfect the thyng which hitherunto was debated but by wordes. Other wayes, that whiche was passed betwene theim, beinge but a naked love, whithout effecte other then certeine delicate kysses—whych served rather to kyndle the coales of desyer then quenche the flame alredye burning within their intralls—seamed but a simple platte or playne table, whiche the conninge painter hath smothed for the nonst to drawe some ymage of exquisytt skille. Wherin being overcharged with intolleracion of desyer, and fynding th' abode of Claudio longer thenne they ymagined, they passed unhappely a pryvye contract betwene themselves; with expectacion to consomat the ful of the matter, with a due hyer of the paines they indured indiffrently in attendinge an effecte of their pleasure, at the retorne of Claudio from Rome. But here Fortune began to presente herselfe uppon the stage, as one that wil be knowen to beare a swaighe in the good happe or infelicitie of man; and is of suche unconstante and malicious regard towardes us, that, when we thinke we bee paste the feare of all perill, and trodden all desasters under our feete, it is then that we fynd leaste assurance in the thinges wherein we reapposed our chiefest pleasure. And in the turninge of her weale is figured the alteracion of oure wordlie affaires; I meane, by a conversion of thinges which earste seamed pleasant and delicat, into a taste excedinge the bitternes of gal; in such sorte, that often tymes wee fynde deathe of more easye burden then wee are hable to beare the panges whiche ordenarilye attende the flatteries of this uncerteine Fortune: whom the poetes and painters (not wythout cause) have drawen in the picture of a blynd woman, standing uppon a tickle staie of an unconstant globe or bowle, representinge thereby her fragilitie, and how blindlye she guides the thinges of the world. What authorities colde I inferr to exclaime agaynst her mobylitie, if it were not for the shortnes of tyme, and that I wil not cloye your memory, wyth so tedious a discourse. Howe

DISCOURSE II

manye have wee seene at the pointe to enjoye a monarkye, kingdom, or siegneury, who, when they leaste thoughte of commutacion or change, have loste their honoure, expulsed their estates, and at laste ended their lyves by a miserable death. Who have redde the sixte booke of Valerius Maximus may justefye my opynion by th' example of Quintus Scipio, a valiant capteyne and consull in Rome, who, longe tyme havinge Fortune at commaundement was seene in a moment, cut in morselles, servinge as unworthie foode to the ravenouse beastes issuinge oute of the savage desarts. Radagaso, sometime king of the Gothes, for all th' assuerance he reapposed in his invincible armye (as he thought), was not expempted frome the dome of inconstante and mortall destynie; for that, his people slaine, his capteines fled, and he taken prisoner, passed under the sentence of an infamous death by Stilicon, generall of th' armye at that time for th' emprour Honorius. Wyth other infynit proffes of antiquitie, wherwith it is no neede to fyll my paper, seinge the domesticall accedentes and like chaunces happeninge amongest oure neighboures at hoame do give sufficient testymonye and faithe of that whiche wee go aboute to prove. And nowe beinge upon the discourse of Livio and his unfortunat Camilla, who, albeit were neyther princes nor governors of kingdomes, yet beinge in the paradise of their pleasure, and at the pointe to performe the last acte of their delytes, encountred in one moment a chang and synister subvercion, all contrarye to the appointmente whiche they had resolved upon their future mariage. And sewer it is an argument of the greatest folly that can bee, to promisse ourselves an assurance of thinges whiche depende uppon the will and dispocition of an other, uppon whiche the yssue is also moste uncerteine: for that, differing from us in councell and ymaginacion, they are also without care in what sort wee take their judgement, seinge they depende no waye upon us nor our fancy. Like as it happened to these ii infortunat lovers: for Claudio nowe ritorned, and not likinge any way th' allyance betwene Lyvyo and his sister, wrought so muche with his father (who sawe not but by the eyes of his son, nor attempted any thinge whereinto Claudio added not the

Quintus Scipio.

conclusion) that Reinaldo renounced the words of his former consent, pacifyenge the parents of Lyvio, by the beste parswacions he cold ymagyn, with thanks to the yong man equal to the greatnes of the honor whiche he offred in seking to be his son in law. Theis newes were no soner ymparted to our ii lovers, but it is to be thoughte they escaped not without sondrye alarams of mortall grefe; whiche had dismissed their passions with the ende of their lyves, if it had not bene for the offer of a simple hope wherupon they grounded a new consolacion: for that they expected at length a remorce in th' olde man (by reason of his promisse) to justefye the contract alreadie passed betwene theim two. Wherof, Camilla, as pinched wyth a grudge of more wronge then th' other, for that she sawe the unjuste malice of her brother was th' only staie of th' effecte of her determynacion, entred into a passion of suche frettinge conceites, tempered wyth a mortall hate to Claudio, an indissoluble zeale to her servante, and a juste dispite agaynst the debylitie of her father, that she was at the point to use force agaynst herselfe, and advance th' effecte of their malice by her untymely death. Wherein, because she woulde not discover openly that which was not yet douted of any, shee retired to a moderation in her greefe, till, the firste parte of the eveninge beyng spent, the desier of sleepe somoned every man to wythdraw hymselfe to his lodginge, when she, in her chamber, wyth th' only company of her woman, began to burst out into newe termes of complainte, cursing the hower of her birthe, accusinge the weaknes and want of corage in her father, but chiefely enveihed againste th' unhappie arryvall of her brother in thys sorte,—'What injustice or crueltie is this of the heavens, to give us a harte to chuse and libertie to love one of equall desyer and semblable will, and then to bar us the priviledge of that fredom in not makinge a perfection of that whych nature hath sett abroche in us by the communyon and conjunction of our thoughtes? Is it reason the bodye be more respected then the mynde, in that the harte and inwarde partes, making a choice of affection, sholde not have authorytie to sommon the bodye as their subjecte to obey th' instinctes and suggestions of the spirite?

The complainte of Camilla.

DISCOURSE II

Nature sewer doth abuse her reputacion in this case, to coyfe her creatures with th'attyre of love, makynge a mutuall consente in both parties, and then to denie the consommacion of the thinge herselfe did fyrst begyn in us. From whence comes th'iniquitie of that lawe which alloweth a father for his pleasure only, and without justice, to force an inclynacion of his children to that which is neither necessarye nor conveniente for theim? Is it not sufficient alas! that we yelde theym honoure, with the tribute of our dutie and service; that wee give soccour to their olde yeres, and attempte nothing without their consent; but that wee muste be subjecte to a further tyrannye in performinge the sentence of their thraldom, althoughe it dyffer whollye from our will and choice? And if mariage be a free conjunction, dependinge uppon an unytie or conformetie of both partes, how can I refuce that wherof is passed alredye a confirmacion, or admit other husband then hee to whom I ham bounde by vowe of consente? Ah! this is one of the frutes of tyrannouse love, to worke the effecte of a consente betwene us, withoute leavinge us a meane to brynge the same to perfection, or suffer us to consider whether the parties knitt together by unytie of affection in spirite might also be assisted with a conjunction of the bodies without offence to God or the worlde. But what? Why do I enter into termes of justice wyth hym, who is no way partaker of reason; and who is so soddaine and uncerteine in his enterprises, that he neyther takes advise afore he strike, nor useth leasure to delyberat or foresee the successe of any thing he beginneth? For as he is naked and without eyes, so is hee voyde of judgement, and unconstante in all his doings, assailinge commonly the hartes of suche as hee fyndes ydle and leaste occupyed with vertue. Ah! spiteful disdayne of kynred, and unnaturall malice of a brother! In what sorte have I deserved this harde pennance at thy hande, to depryve me of the thinge wherin I tooke moste pleasure? Wherein hath the curteyse Livio offended the; if not that his honestie excedes thy rude disposition, and vertue giveth cause of shame to thy wicked will? Or, peradventure, thou disdainest his just merit; for that he is better favored in al companies

Love is naked, and without eyes.

then thyselfe? And is it reason that thy consente confirme my affection? Why sholde my advancement depende uppon thy good will; or the choice of my husbande aske councell of thy consente? Shall I be subjecte to hym who hathe no authoritye over me but by an encrochement of yeres, for that he is the eldest son of my father? Hathe he any pryviledge that waye to govern my will, or geve lawes to my fancie? Nothinge lesse: for my father hath alreadie paste th'accorde betwene Livio and me. But you wyll saye, peradventure, "under a condicion." A simple article, I confesse; whiche also is of no force, if the partie bee voide of pretence or prejudice. And wherin shall it be prejudiciall or proffitable to him, if Livio be my husbande? Seinge it belongeth to my father to depart with my dowery and porcion of mariage, and my husbande to dispose it without interuption, so longe as hee is a member of lyfe. What weakenes is this in a father to be governed whollye by the breath of his son (whose unjuste malice, rather then argument of reason, makes him renounce the worde of his honour) in a case touchinge the quiett and consolacion of her who ought to be no lesse deare unto him then her tyrannouse brother; who, when he hath exposed the uttermoste effecte of his spite, and that I am to be bestowed in an other place by his appointment, it shall appeare whether his commaundemente be as currante over mee then as his malice rageth without measure or reason at this present; protestinge by the height of the heavens that none other then hee to whom I have pawned my faieth, shall enjoye the chaste acquaintance of th'infortunat Camilla? No! Livio is myne, what wrong so ever they do to our vertuese love, whiche so longe as I live shal be indyssoluble in me; beinge redye, withall, to refuce no thinge that may advance the consommacion of the mariage betwene me and him, without whom I fele an ympossibylitie to live.' Wherewith her passion grewe to suche a vehemencie, that her laste wordes ended with the course of longer breathe; in such sorte that shee slyded soddainly from the seat wher she sate, and fell grovelinge uppon the ground, resigning with a dollorous skryke the use of vitall ayre. Albeit the expedition of diligence in her

DISCOURSE II

woman procured with much ado a retorne of life; and with such consolacion and offer of hope as shee colde preferre, shee won her to go to bedde; where, albeit the viewe of the wronge and discurtesye of her brother seamed for a tyme to staie the course of sleepe, yet in the often repeticion of her sorowes appeared a litle of quiette, whiche closed her eyes, and cast her into a slomber, wherin she seamed to beholde standinge afore her th' ymage of her Livio, halfe deade, embrasing her with a pale and hydeous regarde; which forced her to suche a feare, that she brake soddainely oute of her dredefull sleape, spendinge the reste of the wearye nighte in pytifull complaintes. Wherin certeinly she had raison; for that in that dreame, or rather misticall vision, was fygured the desaster whiche not longe after overwhelmed theim both. Neyther oughte wee to fynde it strang if th' apprehensions appearing in our slepe do geve us warninge of the good or evill happeninge unto us; for that wee have certeine recordes which justefye the same in the person of one, Brutus, hee whiche was vanquished in the feldes of Pharsalemo (whether he were awake or in the depthe of his sleepe) seamed to see in his tente a terrible shappe of a certaine sprite pronouncinge his overthrow. Besides th' authorytie of naturall reason movethe us to confesse that, as the ympression of a greate feare, or longinge desyer of anythinge, do presente often tymes affore the eyes of our mynde (the bodie beinge in reste) the ymage of that whiche we love or feare; so also the sprit that is voyde of passion, or at point to fall into some perilous accident, encountreth commonly in his sleape the thinge which hee wisheth not to happen, and abhorreth to remember when his eyes have dismissed the drowsy humour of slepe. For Camilla desiered nothinge lesse then the death of her Lyvio; and yet, not longe after the presage or forewarninge of her dreadefull vysion, she only witnessed the effect, assistinge his funeral with her presence in the tombe, as wel as she was willynge to admit his companie in the secret bedd of their infortunat mariage. Livio, for his part, was not voide of passion on the behalfe of the frowarde successe of his busynes. Albeit, seinge he colde no way bribe the good will of fortune, hee

Brutus warned of his overthrowe in his sleepe.

resolved to geve place to her presente malice, and in attending the benefytt of a better tyme, to practise Claudio by circumstance and mediation of his neare frendes. Albeit, felinge in the meanwhile an intolleracion of love, with contynuall increase of desier to coll the flower of his affection, and taste of the pleasant jewyste of the grape which quencheth the thirste of the loyall lover, he ymparted his paine and request to his ladye, in a letter of this substance: —'Seinge there is no justice, good ladye, to supporte the consent to your owne disquiet, and suffer me to lyve in passion without comparaison, methinke you do wronge to th'indiffrent contentment of us both. For if you desyer my death, you nede use no other minister for fatall execution then the alarams of dollor which I encounter daily by your meanes; but if you have care of my quiett, and greve no lesse with th'imposicion of my mortal torment, why make you suche conscience to yelde me consideration of the honeste zeale I beare you, seing the same dothe also ymporte a speciall contentment to yourselfe? You knowe what is alredie passed betwene us; neyther are you ignorante of the small respect your parentes use towardes you. Wherwyth, if the mutuall consente conclude the mariage, you ought also to understande, that, neyther the tyrannye of the one, nor wante of corage in the other, hath power to wythholde you from that which you are bound to performe, nor hinder me to enjoye the benefyt of my desert. Wherin I appeale to the torch of your conscience, with request to consider in what sort you will advise mee, to th'ende that, by th'assistance of your councell, I maye the better carye over the greatnes of my extremetie; which, as it is divided into spedie releefe or presente dispaire; so, seinge I am of force to passe by the one, I doubt of which of the two to make my moste proffyt. For, albeit the firste hath power to performe the full of my felycity; yet, in attendinge th'effect, I consume in a flame of burning desyer. And the other, if it ymporte a present abridgment of my tormente by untymely deathe, yet in the verye acte consists a spot of dishonour to myselfe, and an everlastinge surname of crueltie to her in whose ballance waigheth th'indyffrent

DISCOURSE II

Lyvyo writeth to Camilla.

DISCOURSE II

sentence of the lyfe or deathe of the moste desolate and loyall Livio.'

Camilla—whyche desired nothing lesse then to delay the desire of her servant, for that herselfe labored of the same disease—retorned the messengier with no other aunswer then that, at after dinner, she would visitt Cornelia; when, also, shee wold satisfie his maister by mouth, for that she feared the subteltie of her brother wolde intercepte her letters. Where with th' infortunat Livio, not knowyng the thred of mischiefe which Fortune was now spynnynge for him, entred into such solace that the chamber wherein he walked seamed to litle to conteine hys present gladnes; the rather for that he ymagined that hys mistresse woulde now dismysse all excuses and impedimentes to th' effect of hys longe desyer, seynge there wanted nothynge to consommate the mariage, but solemne publicacion. In whiche passion of joye, he supplied the tyme in attendinge the commynge of his ladye with singynge and softe musicke; accordyng to the nature of the swan, who, the nearer she draweth to the ende of her destiny, the pleasanter note she synges, bathinge and prunninge herselfe in the purest streame she can fynde, to th' ende to do honor to her funerall fate. And as he ymagined thus to be at the point to arrive in the subburb of his paradise, behold! the approche of the goddesse of his devocion and deare mistres Camilla, with her chambriere, who, as she was alredye privye to the whole practise, so she used her companie nowe to avoyde suspicion, imparting the same to Livio, to th' ende he nede not distruste her presence, yf by chaunce they entred into parley touchynge any secret matche where neded not th' assistance of manye wytnesses.

The propertie of the swan beinge neare her deathe.

And being thus in armes together, God knoweth if anye sorte of kysses or other follies in love were forgotten! Wherin, as it is a common experience that neither bytt nor bridle is hable to governe the furye of love when we be at point to enjoye the pleasures we desyer, so there appered suche an indifferent vehemencie of appetit betwen theim, that at th' instant they made plat or begynnyng of that whiche the same evenynge gave ende to the pleasure and lyfe of

theym both. Wherof, Camilla, as more hoate in desyer, or lesse hable to beare the burden of her burnyng affection, prevented the request of Lyvio, and made plaine the first entrey and path to both their mishappes, saying that, 'for as much as our consentes have concluded a mariage, and that in the breache of our promisse appeareth a perentory prejudice to our consciences, that we seale th' articles of the contract wyth a full consommacion of the secret ceremonies in mariage; bothe to take awaye all occasion of offence, and also to mortifye the malice of my brother, maugre his harte. Wherin,' sayth she, 'beinge fully persuaded of youre consente to my proposition, and for that in cases of love delayes and longe consultation bee hurtefull, and sturre up causes of displeasure to the hartes of suche as be striken with the same disease—wherof the contrarye, the reste of oure humaine affaires require a maturitie of councel, to th' ende the succesce may aunswer the expectation of the parties—so I wishe you to attende the benefyt of time this evenynge: I meane, at the hower of supper, when men are gyven leaste to suspicion, you faile not to come in as secret maner as you can to the gardeine gate, wher my woman shal be readye to conveighe you into my chamber, to th' ende we maye there take advise of that which we have to do.' Wherunto Livio was not curious in consent, and lesse unmindeful to yelde her the choice of a thousande thankes for offringe the priviledge which he doubted to demaunde; givynge her assuraunce to use suche exact wisdome in the conveyghe of so secret a misterie, that Argus himselfe, if he were upon earth, shold not descrye his comming, and much lesse any be pryvye to the daunce but such as performed the rounde. Wherin he was not deceaved; for as he was the firste, so shee failed hym not at the cloase, and bothe theyr miseries of equall qualitie in the ende. Like as it happenethe often times that those amarous bargaines redoundes to the harmes of suche as bee the parties; who, albeit, do alledge a certaine respect of honestie in theyr doinges by pretence of mariage, yet God, beinge the judge of their offence, will not suffer the wronge to the obedience of their parentes in concludyng privye contractes unpunished, and that wyth suche a penaunce as the



Delaies be hurtefull in cases of love.

DISCOURSE II

remembrance is notorious in all ages. But now to our Livio, who, neyther unmindeful of the hower, and lesse forgetfull to kepe appointement, attyreth himselfe for the purpose in a nighte gowne girt to hym, with a paire of shoes of felte, leaste the noyse of his feete shoulde discover his goinge; and, for a more honor of his mistres, he forgat not his perfumed shyrte, spidered with curious braunches accordinge the fansie of his ladye, with his wrought coyffe poudred with diverse drogues of delicat smell. Wherewith, he stealeth in as secret maner as hee can to the gate of appointement, where he founde the guide of his love; whome hee embrased, as well for the service he founde in her, as also in that she resembled the beautye of his mistres Camylla, who, after she had taken her nightes leave of her father and brother, with search that every man was in his place of reste, retireth to her chamber with such devocion as commonly they that fynde themselves in semblable jorneye to worke th' effect of such like desir; where, encountering her infortunat servant, it was concluded to imploye no time in vayne reverence or idle ceremonies, but in a moment they entred their fatal bed together; where, after certaine amarous threates, and other folyes in love (servyng as a preamble to the part they ment to playe) Livio entred into the unhappye pageant of his fatal and last pleasure. Wherin he chaffed himselfe so in his harnesse, and was so greedie to cooll the firste flower of the virginitie of his Camilla, that, whether the passion of joye prevailynge above the force of the hart, and th' inner partes, smothered with heate, coulde not assiste th' enterprise accordynge to their office, or that he exceeded nature in surfettinge upon his pleasant banquet, he founde himselfe so sharplye assayled wyth shortnes of breath, that his vitall forces began to faile him in the middest of the combat. Like as not longe since it happened to Attalus, the cruell king of the Hunes; who, in the firste nighte of his infortunat mariage in Hungarye, enforced himself to so greate a corage in the pleasaunt encounter wyth hys newe wyfe, that hys dead bodye (founde in her armes the nexte mornynge) witnessed his excesse and glottenouse appetit in the skirmishe of love. Whyche also myghte bee the bane of thys

The kinge of the Hunes died in the excesse of pleasure with his wife the firste nighte of their mariage.

Livio; who, respectynge no measure in drinkynge of the delicat wyne, no more then yf it had bene but one banquet dressed for hym in the whole course of his lyfe, was so over charged with desyre in that pleasaunt skirmishe, that the conduites of lyfe, stoppynge uppon a soddaine, barred to adde fourther strengthe to hys gredye appetyt. Whereuppon, he became without mocion or feelinge in the armes of Camylla; who, feelynge hym without sence, and that he seamed more heavy and rude uppon her then affore, dowted a trothe; wherin, also, she was fully satisfyed by the lyght of the candle, which she caused her chamberiere to bringe to the bedde syde; where, vewynge the dead bodye of him whom she loved no lesse then herself, and judgyng the cause as yt was in deede, entred ymedyatly into suche a mortall passion of dollour, that, albeyt she woulde have exposed some woordes of compassion on the behalfe of the pytefull accident, yet, feelyng a generall dymynucion of force thorowe all her partes by th' ynundacion or waves of soddaine sorowe, she founde her tonge not hable to supplye the desyer of her hart, whych, wyth the consent of the reste, loathynge the use of longer lyf, resigned her borowed tearme to the fates; fallynge at th' instant without sence or feelynge uppon the dead body of hym whom shee accompted a dutie to accompanie in the other worlde, as well as she delyted in hys presence durynge their mutuall aboade in thys miserable valey. A happye kynde of deathe, yf wee had not to consyder the perill whyche attendes suche wretches as, having no meane to performe th' effect of their pleasure but by unlafull stealthe, are so franke for the shortnes of their tyme, that, in satisfynge the glot of their gredye appetit, they make no conscience to sacrifise ther owne lyfe. But yf wee passe furthe in the viewe of these offences, we shall fynde a derogacion of the honour and integretye of the mynde, with a manifest prejudice and hazarde to the healthe of the sowle: whyche makes me of opinion, that yt is the most miserable ende that maye happen to manne; the rather for that the chyefest thynge whyche is regarded in the pursuet of that enterprise, is to obeye the sommance of a bestely and unbridled luste of the fleshe. Wherein I wishe oure frantike

Livyo died of the like, in the armes of his Camilla.

DISCOURSE II

lovers, whoe (makynge contemplacion uppon causes of love) accomptes yt a vertue to ende their lyves in thys lascivius bonde of pryvye contract, to refrayne that whyche is so indifferent hurtefull bothe to the sowle and body; seynge theire death is not onelye without argument of desperation, but also their sowles moste sewer to receive the guerdon of civil morder; whyche we oughte to feare and eschewe as neare as wee can, afore the sequestration of the earthelye substance from the part of divinitie whych wee partycipat with God. And what contentement or glorye soever they reappose in thys monstrous abrydgement of nature, reprehendynge theym of desloyaltie whyche do the contrarye, yet their acte merites none other name then the title of brutalitie; neyther can I thinke but their opynion is guided by some sprite or humor of frantyke follye. Lyke as yt is not the part of a Christian (as the Appostle affirmeth) to prefer the fyckle pleasures of the flesh, whych are of shorter moment then the thoughtes of a man, afore the feare of God, recke of our life, and care to present our sowles without spot afore the troane of mercie in the daye of generall accompte, when all thoughtes shal bee deciphered and no falte unpunyshed.

The poore girle-of-the-chamber to the dead Camilla, seynge thys fatall misterye, wyth the distresse she was in for that she was a companion of the conspiracye, thinkyng to give ende and playe the laste acte of the tragedye, serched about the chamber for some glave, or sword, or other thinge apte to make the minister of her blody intent. And, being deceaved that way, she had no other meane to playe doble or quit, but with impetuosity of dollor. Wherein, she raged with such dolefull skryches, that the brute of her complaint awaked the whole house. Whereof, the firste that entred the chamber of funeralles was the tyraunt Claudio; whoa, albeyt was th' only cause of this dolorous massacre, yet, in place of confessyng his falte, or yelding sorow to the losse of such ii loiall lovers, he grewe in more rage by the viewe of the dead body of Livio. Whereof, as he would willingly have committed a newe morder, saving that he sawe him without respiration are argument of lyfe, so, his anger being torned into wodnes, and rage into furye,

he wreaked his collor upon the poore girle; to whome he gave iii or iiii estockados with hys dagger thorowe the bodye, and slonge ymediatlye oute of the chamber, to the greate amaze and terrour of hys unfortunat father, who, seynge hys house full of morders, and hys sonne committed oppen slaughter in the person of the innocent gyrle, coulde not so governe his passion of dolour but he seamed more ready to passe that waye then desyrous to enjoy longer life. Albeit, beyng kepte from doynge force agaynst himselfe by certaine hys servantes that were there, he uttered som part of hys inwaerde gref by open exclamation agaynst hys owne misfortune, inveighynge chyeflye agaynst the inordinat will of hys daughter, with advise to all fathers to kepe a steddye eye uppon their slypprye youthe. Wherein, he commended unto theym the example of hys owne follye in favouryng so much the fonde appetit of hys daughter that he gave leave to her libertye to excede the viewe or persewte of his eye; accusyinge chieflie the impedyment he gave to the mariage, seyinge that in the same appeared the perentory ruin of hys house, continuall desolation to hys olde yeres, and in the ende to leave hys goodes and lyvynge to straungers for want of an heire of his bodye. For that, havynge but ii children, the one was already dead, and the other no lesse worthe, by the mortall violence he had used upon the innocencie of the mayd; who, after that surgeants had somwhat stayed the bledyng of her woundes, confessed the contract and circumstance of the love, whereof you have harde a particular declaracion. Whiche rather encreased the dule of th' olde man then gave moderacion to his sorowe; whyche, notwithstandynge, by the perswacions of hys neighbours, and constraint of necessity (whych as a vertue giveth pacience perforce to all extremeties) he dysmissed in outeward showe, and disposed hymself to the funerall obsequies in as solemne manner as he cold; erectynge a tombe of marble in Sainct Francys' churche, wherin were shryned the bodies of the ii lovers, as dead at one time and by one occasion, to the greate regreat of the whole towne: wherein, everye one was so indifferentlye passioned wyth sorowe, that a man should hardly have hard any other

DISCOURSE II

tunes then publike exclamacion against the crueltie of Claudio. By whyche generall complaint, together with the depositions of the mayde (who dyed within three dayes after her hurtes), Dom Ramyro Catalano, governor of Cesenna under Cesar Borgia, began to enter into tearmes of compassion of the behalfe of the ii dead lovers and mortall anger against Claudio; for that his cruelty was the cause of the death of the ii only flowers and peragons in Italy. Wherin, he purseued so vehemently the rigour of his office and equity of justice that Claudyo lost his head secretly within the castel, for feare of mutine or tumulte of his frendes.

This was the miserable ende of the love and lif of the ii Sisennois; wose death and discorse of amarous traffique, for that it doth not exced the remembrance of our time, I have presented as a familiar example affore the eyes of our youth, to th' ende that every one, respecting the duty of his own indevor, may use the misery of this precedent as a paterne to prevent the like myschief in themselves. Wherin, also, as we may note that love is but a rage or humor of frantike follye, derived of ourselves, and converted to our owne harme by th' indiscrecion that is in us, so the nexte remedy to withstand that furye is to encounter him under th' enseigne of raison, and flee the occasions whyche weaken the mynde wythout travell and bringe the bodye in the ende to the theatrye of execution. Wee are also warned here to temper the delites wee possess with suche measure that, forgettynge the blyndenes of Livio, we maye eschewe the horrour of hys acte, with detestation of the folye he used in the glott of his unlawfull pleasure.

# DISCOURSE III

A YONG LADY in MYLAN, after she had longe abused the vertue of her youthe and honour of maryage with an unlawfull haunte of divers yonge gentlemen, becoms an unnaturall morderer of the frute of her wombe, for that shée was forsaken of hym who gatt her wyth Chylde.

# GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

## DISCOURSE III

### THE ARGUMENT

ACCORDING to th' oppinion of the wise Demosthenes, there is no one vertue that hath made more famous the fathers of former time thenne the gyft of eyvill curtesy, neyther is nature more glorifyed in the ympes of her creation then in that we dispose our selves and doings according to the disposicion of the clymat whiche shee hath appointed to governe our accions and thoughtes; respecting chiefly to refraine from violacion of innocent blodde, which in al ages hath restored a name of great clemencie to diverse, albeit, touching other effectes, they were amb; cius tyrantes, and cruell enemyes to their owne commonwealthe. Whiche unnatural crueltie, also, as it hath bene, and is, of such detestacion amongest the rudest companions of the world, that the verye barbarians have alwaies had in horror the wickednes of suche as pursewed the queste of guiltles blodde, and toke awaye the life of him that had not committed offence, so they have alwaies had in honour the vertue of suche as soughte to extirppe the roote of tyranical furies borne for the ruine and destruction of man; like as, among the Romaine emprours, Nero, Calygulus, and Commodus; amongest the straung nacions, Phalaris, Alexander, Phereus, Dyomedes, and the cursed Numylysyntha, Quene of Thracia, who, after she had miserably murdered an ynnocent mother, committed semblable crueltie upon the childe within her bellye. Wherof, albeit the horrour was greate, yet was it nothinge in respect of the hellishe acte of a lady of oure tyme, happyninge not in the Antropophogans, Scythya, or amongeste Canybales or Amazones, aunciente morderers of their children, but in the harte and middest of Europe, and in one of the most faire and riche provinces of the world; where aforetime hath bene kepte an *Academia* or generall scoole to instructe all nacions for the honeste and vertuous direction of their lives, but of late was founde there a gentlewoman, degeneratinge frome th' instincte of her secte, whieh exposed effectes of more crueltye thenne earst hath bene noted by any writers of any age: whereof the discourse followethe at large.

# TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

HAVINGE then to treat upon tragicall affayres, procedynge of unnaturall luste, with lasyvius disposition, the onlye maister pocke and chief fountayne from whence distylleth all poysned humors of infection, overflowinge at lengthe the channel of his quiett cours with unrewelye waves of inordinat cruelty, I meane here to presente unto you the trewe pattorne of a seconde Medea, in the person of a yonge ladye, borne and wantonlye bredd up in the ryche and populus cytie of Mylleyne; whom, bycause myne author seames to christen by a contrary tytell, to avoyde all occasions of myslykes whiche other ladyes (bearinge the lyke name) myght unjustly fall into by the lavishe mouthes of the malycyous sorte, I think it good also to passe under tearmes of lyke scylence her parentes and husbande, to th'ende that their vertue (meryting a better mede then to beare the blame of the detestable lyfe of there wycked daughter) come not also in question amongest such *diabolos* as have their tounges alwayes typped with the mettall of malycyous slaunder. This Pandora then (borowinge her name of the qualytye of her unchaste and crewell conversacyon) gave manyfest signes, during the tyme of her infansye, of her future disposition, arguinge the poysined clymatte, whiche, firste gettynge domynion over the yonge yeares of her grene understanding, dyrected after the whole seaquel of her life by the dyal of a cursed constellacion, makinge the latter remaynder of her yeres subjecte to a thousande ylls and perentory inconveniences. For she was disdaynfull without respect, spytefull without measure, honge altogether full of the fethers of folyshe pryde, so whollye gyven to wallowe in dilycarie that she detested al exercises of vertue, and so drowned in the fylthye desyre of the fleshe that, afore shee had attayned to the full of fortene yeres, she became such a banqueroupte of her honour that a poore page, the sonne of a simple artyficer, noryshed

Badde argument in a yong woman.

DISCOURSE III

in the house of her father for charitie sake onlye, crept so farr into her creditt, that, with small sute, hee gayned the use of the ile whiche ought to bee invincyble in unhonest sorte. Wherin, notwithstandinge, after hee hadde once ramppyred himselfe, fyndinge the soyle no lesse fertyle then to be tylled with easye travell, he founde, also, no lesse famylyarytie in the owner; who feasted him so frankly with the pleasaunte jeweste and precious commoditie of her ilande, not earste inhabyted by straungers, that his common exercise was to kepe her companie every night alone in her chamber, leaste the Leutyns and daungerous bogbeares, appearinge by visions in the night, shoulde put her in feare, or kepe her from sleape. This was one chiefe delyght wherin she toke pleasure in the prime time of her age, an undoubted kalender, suer, of the noble actes to be expected in this ympe as her yeres grewe to greater nomber, and her desier of more maturytye. Which wicked exercise is suffycyent of itselfe to untye the tunges of bacbyters, styrringe up the malyce of certeine *Pololugos*, redye alwayes upon one simple occasion, or for the falte of one, to reprehende the honour of all dames, if the vertue of you chast ladyes weare not only hable to confute all their suborned reasons of reproche, but also, by the cleare integrety of your conversacion, to charme the mouth of the slaunderer from inveyghinge synister meanes agaynste anye of the noble secte femenyne, so muche commendable and to bee honored of all men. This yonge pupill and prentyse of Venus, although shee lystned with small trayninge to the lewre of Cupido, yet used shee, notwithstandinge, such care in the conveyghe of her folyes that the best eyes in her fathers house weare to blynd to beholde the amorous traffique which passed betwene the page and her; neyther was she doughted (where soever shee came) to be preferred to the firste place in the bedroll of pewer virgins; although (as you have hard) she had payd the fyrste frutes of her virgynytie to one no lesse unworthy of th'offering then to enjoye the possession of so deare a jewell, beinge already vowed to another by them that by most ryght ought to dispose of it. And

Her parentes.

who maye see here as in a glasse their greate neglygence and

lyttle care in th' education of their children, preferrynge rather to pamper them in pleasure, wyth to large a skope in lybertye (the chiefeste meane to seduce yonglyngs not yet confyrmed in rypenes of discression) then to restrayne th' appetyte of ther foolyshe will; whiche doth not onely make theim bodyes subjecte to all sensuall prostytucyon, but also subvertes the honor of their whole house wherof they toke there begynninge. This Italian impe and honest Pandora, wearye even nowe of the companye of her page—who, belyke, was not hable to quenche the luste of his unsaciable mystresse—began, with famylyer glaunces of her eye and other secret regardes of good wyll, to practyse a seconde league of societie, concludinge a newe bargayne of love wyth a yonge gentylman, lustye and likelye everye waye to performe th' expectacion of her desyre; who, also, for his first endevor, founde the meanes to corrupt her governesse with certeine peces of golde, armes (suer) sufficient enoughe of themselves to batter the walls of the strongest and beste defended fortresse that this daye is under the pole of heaven; which, also, was the kaye (as the poetes fayne) that opned Jupiter the dore of the brazen tower wherin the fayre Danae, daughter of Acrises, was curyously enclosed. This second lover, thinking to cooll the firste flower of the maydenhed of Pandora (beinge yet scars xvi yeres of age) began to doubt of the case when hee founde the waye alreadye beaten, and the entrye so easye without resistance. Albeit, contentinge himselfe with his present fortune, beinge dryven notwithstandinge to drinke the lees of the vessel which the page had gaged to his hande, and sucked out the sugred jewse of that grape, he fayled not to court her with a contynuall haunte of his companye, in suche sorte that his chiefe exercise and tyme was employed in the supplye of her gredy desyre; untyll at laste, beinge cloyed for want of chaunge of dyotte, or wearye with so longe huntinge one kynde of chase, or (peradventure) not hable any longer to mainteyne the skirmysh for want of fresh supplyes, he began to suborne divers meanes to purchase his departure. Wherin, with th' assystance of a fewe fayned importunytyes, hee prevayled only with this excuse, that, being captayne of

Money is hable to batter the strongest fortresse under heaven.

DISCOURSE III

certeyne bands of footmen, it behoved him (he sayde) for greate respectes, to visitte his charge with expedicion. Wherewith, with small sute, hee gatte leave and wente his waye, resigning the forte whiche hee had so long battered, to the guard of an olde and rich gentylman dwellinge in the same cytie; who, doatinge more upon the bewtie of Pandora thenne notinge deligentlye her disposition, maryed her, after longe intercession to her frendes: a mache farr unmete considering th' inequalitye of their yeres. For he, bearing the burden of fifty winters upon his backe, his former moysture and strength converted into watrye humors of weaknes, scars hable to sustayne nature, who at those yeres, also, sommons all men to declyne, seamed farr unhable to encounter in singler combate with her, that had not yet sene th' uttermost daye of eyghtene yeres. Albeit being maried, although his lott was to take other mennes leavings, yet he myslyked not his choyse; but being mounted upon a common hackney, he thought himselfe well horsed, and as one not very scrupulous, or lyttell skylled in suche kind of housekeping, he toke her for a pure virgyn: a thinge not much to be merveyled at, seinge the daily accedentes in the like affayres, and specyally the subtyll charmes and sundrie legerdemaynes, wherof such *Dermopteræ* or letherwynged huswyves, as Pandora, have no small store, to cover their faultes, and make theym seme maydenlike (although they have alreadie playd the dydopper) that the clearest eyes had nede of spectacles, and the wiseste wyttes want sleyght, to dyserne their conning. And now this newe maryed dame, gettinge firste the upperhande of her olde husbande, made her seconde endevore to have the whole conveygh of all the househoulde doinges, whereby her commaundement was only currant, and she, houldinge the rayne of her lybertie in her owne hand, mighte haunte and use what place for recreacion she lyste at her pleasure. Neyther forgatt she so to brydel goodman hornsbye (her husbande) with obedience, that, without his controlmente or suspicion, Monsieur le Page (who gave the firste penie of her honestie) had free accesse unto her chamber, wher he paide his own arreareges, and also helped to supply the colde corage of the olde knight;

who, as he rather encreased her appetyte then satisfyed her desire, so his good wil, peradventure, was more then his power hable to perform. And as the page had thus eftsones placed himselfe in the possession of his former pray, it chaunced that a yong gentillman, banished from Rome for certeine forged conspiracies incensed against him, fled to Myllan; wher, lodging right over the pallais of Pandora, beheld easely the amorous glees of his neighbour, who toke singuler pleasure to be requited with the like regards; and seing her fayre, yong, and disposed to al recreacions of pleasure, began to profer her love, first by the pitifull regarde of his countenaunce, painted full of arguments of dule, and after by certenie secrete sighes declaringe (after th' Ytalyan maner) the ardent flame of affection, not ceassinge continuallye to burne his harte in the desier of her bewtie. And, omittinge no meane which mought move her to take compassion of his peyne, hee forgat not to passe divers times afore her lodginge, with a lute or other musicke of soft melodie; wherunto, also, he accorded his phyled voyce with notes of pleasant twne, and that with suche a grace of great delight that the swete noyse of his hermony seamed a thousand times of more entysinge melodye then the heavenly jonkinge of the nytyngal. Wherwith, in shorte tyme, he kyndled a fyre in the harte of this yong wanton, toward whome he nedde not have used such cyrcumstance or longe ceremonye, seinge that of herselfe (if his sute had not intercepted her) shee had prevented his meaninge in takinge upon her th' office of the clyent, beinge onlye geven to raunge and ravyn for the satisfyinge of her inordynat luste, desyrous to chaunge her acquaynted soyle for the freshe harbage of grene pasture. Wherwith, one eveninge (her husbande beinge from home) this Romain lover, called Candidio Iocundo, made his walke in solemne maner under her chamber wyndowe, playing of his lute with a voyce of suche masquid musycke, myngled with outewarde showes of dolor in his face, and poudred fynely with sundrye syghes of pityful disposition, that it seamed of suche straunge operacion to the harte of Pandora, beinge alreadye throughlye daunted with the desyre of him that soughte but to deceyve

The order of a fearefull lover in disclosing his affection.

DISCOURSE III

her, that, beinge nowe no lenger hable to kepe her eares shutt from the voice of the crafty charmer, desired him to enter. Wherunto (as the subtill fouler, pyping all the daye in the bottom of the hedge tyll he hath allewred to his bushe the birde hee chieflye desyreth) he agreed, I am sure, with more contentment of the offer then dyfficultye to be entreated. And, being arived in the haven of his desyre, God knoweth with what devocion they offered to the goddesse of pleasure, celebrating the banquet with all dyshes of dylycacye. Wherwith th' ympudente Pandora forgat not to feaste him so frankly with shamefull encounters on her parte, that, with lyttell sute and lesse intreatye, he entred commons in the place whiche the olde John thought to be reserved severall to himselfe, and with small conynge gave her checkmate that stode slenderlye upon her guarde, lothynge even now her incontynencie that so easelye yelded her honestie in praye to whosoever woulde pursue it. Wherin, certeynly, he had good reason. For, of al the degrees of unhappye creatures, that, without the consente of womanlye shame, do wyckedlye transgresse the sacred lawe of chastitye, they ought chieflye to use some respect of honestye, that are admitted into the inviolable order of matrimonye; and if their desteny be incident to so evil a fortune as to enter into societie with a secret frend besydes their husbande (a thynge notwithstandynge forbidden by the worde of God, and lesse tollerable by the possytive lawes of the worlde) yet ought they (I saye) be so confirmed in theyr unlawfull affection towarde their second pewmate, that their amitye maye seame of perpetuitye and without chaunge; neyther ought they be so carelesse in the choyse of their extraordinary consort as their own doings afterwards may make them worthelye to be laughed at. Which, indede, is the just reward for such as seme so ligt of their seale that they shott of without eyther mache, flint, or pouder; and of whose folyshe and unshamfull lyghtnes, procedes the argument of so many comodies and enterludes played in open stage—not so much to the confusion of themselves and parentes, as open scandall to their husbands and houses for ever. Wherof the familyer example is to be noted in the

Slaunder.

sequel of this Pandora, who was not only in short time utterly detested of that Romain, but also a common jestinge-stocke, and pointed at, by his meanes, of al men, for her rashe familiaritye used towards hym; who, not long after the fyrst foundacion of this frendship, was cald home from exile by Leo de Medicis, their soveraigne vycar of the Sea of Rome, perdonyng his offence, and restorynge the use of his former lybertye. At whose departure (unlooked for) Pandora entred into no small passion of dolour, not for any fervent affection or love whiche she bare to her Romain frende, but because his sodaine goinge awaye lefte her voyde of all lycours to quenche the burnynge flame of the gredy goote of her unnatural concupiscens; and chiefly because Monsieur le Page began, also, to waxe cold in the combat whiche he had wonte to maintayne wythe suche courage. But Fortune here was so friendlye to the fulfyllynge of her licencious appetit, that she (styring up a freshe supplie of her desyre) presented in the listes a yong knight of Myllan called Cesar Parthonope; who, by chaunce, hyrynge the lodging of the late Romain succeded hym also in desyre and diligence. For he, at the fyrste vewe, regardynge the flateringe beautye of this Alcyne his neyghbour, suffered himselfe unadvisedly to slyppe into the snares of love, honorynge that in his harte with true sinceritie as a deare jewel whiche his predecessour worthelye hated wythe dewe detestacion. And entrynge here into the pagant of love, his firste was to gyve som outwarde arguments of his inwarde affection, wherin he began to make many pale-walkes afore her gate, rovynge wyth his eyes at her chamber-windowes (accordyng to the amorous order of the vayne Spanyard) utterynge, by the dolefull vewe of his troubled countenaunce, the greate and secrete desyre quarelynge inwardlye wyth his unrulye thoughts. But what? Nede a man use polycie wher slender sute wyll prevayle? Or who wyll bend his battery to that fortresse, wherof the captayne demaundes parly, and sues for composition? And, besides, when the vaile of shame is once removed from our eyes, what let is there to staye the sensual course of our bestly appetits? And they that suffer the raine of reason to slacke, or wholly to slip out of their hands, semes

Her bewtie.

DISCOURSE III

as transformed in a moment, and so weakned touching the lively mocions and forces of the spirit, that the exterior provocacions and appetit of desyre prevails wholy above the inwarde resistance and accions of the soule. Lyke as this glotton and impudent Pandora; who, seing her somtimes saluted with a pleasant eye of her new neighbour, forgot not to requit him with such wanton glaunces, and of suche open understandynge, that the knyght, dowbtynge not of the successe of his interprise, assured himselfe alredy of the victorye. Wherin he was somwhat holpen by the hand of fortune; who, providing a jorney for the husband of Pandora, touchinge th' execution of a commission in a forein countrye, kept hym absent in those affaires the space of a yere or more. Wherin, Parthonope forgot not to use th' opportunitye of so convenient a time; and being ignorant withal of the greate libertie of his mistres—who drew him on al this whyle by fine traines, to th' end to make him more eager of bit—had no waye to unfold the cause of his passion but by a letter, which he made the messenger of his grefe and soliciter of his desyre in this sorte:—

Parthonope writteth to Pandora.

'The curious Artificer and coninge worke-woman Dame Nature, I see wel (good madam) was not so careful to worke you in her semelie frame of all perfections, as the powers divine and disposers of the daungerous and loftye planets (assisting her endevour with certaine peculier ornaments of their speciall grace) weare redye to open their golden vessell of precious treasur, powring by great abundance their heavenly gifts upon you, striving (as it semes) whiche of them for th' encrease of his glory shold dispose himself most liberally on your behalf. Like as (according to the poetes) they contended of olde for the adorning by several ornaments the late Pandora, whom, for all respects, they agreed to be the odd ymage of the world, but specially for beautie; which if it dazeled the eyes of the gods, shining as a twinkling starr in th' elements above, yours I thinke was reserved as a torch of glistring flame to give light to the creatures of the midel world. Wherof (for my part) vewing with to ardent affection the sundry celestial ornaments imparted to you by

the gods, with the percinge beames of rare beautie gyven you for your dowrie of Nature, I doubt whether mine eyes (dimmed altogether with admiracion) wil first crie out for the losse of their former sight, or my whole bodie (plunged in the passion of affection) wil accuse the heart with the rest of th' inwarde senses for consentinge so easely to cause of their disquiet: wherin my lyfe wayeth indiferentlye in the ballance of a thousand annoyes, and mine auncient libertie, in the meane whyle, kept close in an extreme captivitye. Albeit, measuring your heavenly shape, with th' utwarde showe of singuler curtesye that semes to occupye al your partes, I can not resolve of any crueltie to consiste in you; neither can I judge (by the argument of your beauty) but that my captivitie shal be spedely converted into a happie deliverie; like as, also, my hope half assureth me, triumphinge with honor over the doubtfull object of my thought, to tast at your hands of the pleasaunt frutes of the thinge I chiefly desyre: which is (in accepting me as your servant and secret frend) to admit me into such place of pitye, as the dewe merit of my unfayned service deserves by justice. Wherin your act shal seme no lesse meritorious afore the throne of the hyghe goddesse, then honorable wyth generall fame for ever in the worlde, for relevynge him, who, without your assistance (being wholy transformed to th' appetite of your wyll) fyndes the burden of lyfe of suche uneasye tolleracion, that the leaste repulse of his sute at your hands, imports his fatal summonce, to resigne the tearme of his borowed yeres in this worlde. Neither doth he desyre to have the fruicion of his earthly dayes any lenger, then imploye the same withal humilitie in the service of you; whome his hart hath alredy pronounced the soverein ladye of his lyfe, wherof, you only maye dispose at your pleasure.
—Your unfayned CESAR PARTHONOPEE.'

Whiche letter he delivered unto his page, experienced alredye in the conveye of like affaires, who (accordinge to the sharp passion of his maister) used th' expedicion of time in the dispatch of his charge, whereuppon depended the recovery of his soveraine. But she being alredy (as you

DISCOURSE III

Of true love.

have hard) enamored of the knyght, who was the first that wooed her with arguments, felt even now, by the discours of this letter, such encrease of affection, pinching so extremly withe desyre to see him, that, without all order of womanly discrecion she imbraced the page in the behalf of his maister, gyvinge him this aunswere, to require his maister not to doubte to come to her house. 'Wherof,' saith she, 'I also desier him, to th' end I may be resolved by the breth of his own mouth of that which I yet doubte touching the report of the letter.' Wherin she preferred vehement importunities, shewinge the boye whiche waye he shoulde bringe hym to her chamber; 'where,' saith she, 'I wil attend his comming this evening.' Wherwith the page returned, discoursing point by point the successe of his embassage to the dolorous knight; who, revived by the gladsome newes of his boye, but chieflye by the shorte appointment resolved upon by his mistresse, cast of at th' instant th' apparell of dule, disposinge himselfe every waye to performe th' expectacion of the charge, committed unto him by the mouth of her whose commaundement he woulde not transgresse, though his lyfe should incurre the hazard of a thousand perilles. And putting himselfe in as seamelye order as he thought good, went (only with his page) in solemne maner to visit the saint; who was of herselfe more redye to graunt freelye then the pylgrym to demaunde by petition, and who, attending his commyng with more desier to ease the passion of the patient, in quenching the fervent rage of her unsaciable appetit, then he for his part had cause to yelde adoration to so detestable a shryne, was withdrawn all alone into her chamber, where he founde her coyfed for the nonst onely in a nyghtgowne, and attire for the night redie to go to bed. Which, with the naturall shewe of her livelye beautye, set out to the most advantage by the shining light of the wax candels, drove the knight at the first into such astonishment, that the use of his speech was converted into scilence, and his eyes onely occupied in beholding the rare beauty of her who was utterly unworthie to weare so precious a jewell of nature. Albeit, expulsing at last the fever of his dombe traunce, with kyssyng her white and delicat handes as his

firste entre into a further matter, proposed the cause of his comming in this sort:—'I may, by good reason, accompt myselfe more in the favor of fortune, then any gentilman that ever was incident to any good hap, seing (good madam) that besides th' assistance of the place, I am also preferred to a convenient meane to unfold unto you at large the smothered griefe preserved hetherunto (to my great payne) in th' utermost parte of my intrailles; whiche longe sins had sought a vent to burst out in open flame, if the dewe of the hope of that favor whiche now I finde in you, had not served as a necessary licour of comfort to delaye the raginge heat of the furnaise. For otherwise, good madame, I assure you, the smal experience I have to digest the bitter pylles of love, had offered my lyfe an untimely sacrifise to death. And nowe, seing by th' intercession of fortune, and greate curtesie of your good ladyship, I am not only sprinkld with the water of new consolation, but also arived before th' oracle to whom I have so long desyred to present the earnest penie of my humble service, I besech you (sayth hee) not witthout teares and sighes of pytiful disposition, open the windows of your pytye, and let fall the swete showers of compassion upon this torment, dealing so extremely with me without seassing; whiche, because you shal not thinke to be of lesse passion then the words of my mouth seme troubled in utteryng the secret sorow of my hart, looe! here I am become, in your presence, the pytifull solyciter of min owne cause.' Wherewith Pandora, who hetherto had loved but only to satisfye her inordinat lust, and seynge with all th' importunities of her clyent, all to be sprinkled with the teares of his eyes, requited him with like arguments of kyndnes; and feling now within her hart certain mocions assayling the secret of her thoughts with unfained affection towarde her loyall Parthonope, coulde not any lenger dissimull that which she chiefly desired, but imbracing hym with sundry signes of assured familiaritye, sayde unto him, more for maners sake then otherwise:—'I marvaile, syr, that, being armed with so smale experience, you cane so clarkly discouers of th' effects of love, whose misteryes are not so plainly to be reveiled by anye, as by those that have taken degree in

Pandora alloweth the requeste of her lover

DISCOURSE III

his skoole. And wel coulde I impute that to your rashnes, whiche by your letters you have tearmed a crueltie in me; for your sute hath not ben of such continuance, as it may crave sentence in poste, nor your travaile so painfull as the reward ought to folow with suche hoat expedition. Albeit as you feele your owne hurt (not escapinge peradventure without some panges of affection,) so you must thinke the martyredom is not peculyar to one, but dividyng himselfe into a lyke *simpathia* of passion, hath wayed us both in th' indifferent ballance of affection. For if love hathe buylte his bowre in the botome of your harte, I must confesse unto you, syr, that I draw under the yoke of his awe, neyther is my torment anythyng inferior to yours. Wherof I had long (eare this) gyven you understandyng, by plaine practise, if the vaile of shame (a comen enemye to the amorous enterprises of us women) had not covered mine eyes, and closed my mouth with feare, that I durst never (whylest my husband was at home) caste forth suche baytes of the greate good will I have borne you, sins you weare our neighbour, wherby you might perceive wyth what loyaltie I have chosen and adopted you th' only owner of my hart, and wyth whom I wishe to passe the remainder of my lyfe, with suche pleasure and contentement, as is necessary for the solace of twoe true lovers.' Whiche last wordes (for the more assuraunce of the bargaine) she forgot not to seale with sondry sortes of kysses and other homlye trickes of familiaritie, wherby the knight being absolutlye resolved of that whyche earste hee douted began to take possession of her mouth, adorynge her eyes wyth lookes of lovynge admiration, and, passyng in order to her whyt necke of the colour of the freshe lylye, came at laste to beholde her bare brestes, semynge lyke twoo litle hyls, or mountaynes, environnynge a rosye valleye of most pleasaunt prospect, whiche he forgat not humbly to honor wyth the often print of his mouthe. And passynge some space in these amorous traffiques wyth a thousand other sleights of folye, wherof our vayne lovers have no lacke when they seme to dispute of pleasure wyth contentement of desyere, they entred the lystes of their singuler combat, in a faire feelde bed, redye

dressed for the purpose; where Parthonope, encounterynge his pleasante enemye wyth no lesse force and corage of his part then she had grounded experience to wythstande his malice in suche exploits, entred the breach, whych so many had made assaltable to his hande. And beinge in possession of the commen place of Pandora, she founde hym so valyaunt in th'affaires of her desyer, that in respect of the loftye corage of this newe champyon, she accompted al the rest but children that earst had traded wyth her in the lyke traffique. Wherfore, from th'instaunt, she gave him such assured place in her frendship, that hangynge wholy upon the shoulders of Parthenope, she had no quiet in her mind but when her eyes weare occupied in beholdyng his presence. Neither was he (for his part) voyd of lyke affection; for, beinge enchaunted with the charmes of this venemous basile, he imployed his time to court her continually with his companye, defying al felicities in the world, but that which he semed to receive by the felowship of Pandora; to whom alon he yelded all devocion with great humilitie. But this pleasure, being of slipper continuance, stale awaye with the shortnes of time, their great amitie converted into indignacion and spitfull revenge. Yea! their mutuall societie, sealed with all assuraunce of affection in their harts, was, by and by, so separated and utterlye dissolved, that it was never hable to returne to his former unitye. For, sone after the league of this new frendship, behold the page, sumwhat refreshed by the absence of two or three monethes from his mistres, repaires to his olde exercise; wherin he founde no worse intertainement, at the bountifull hand of Pandora, then when he fyrst tylled the soyle of so fertil an ile. Neyther woulde she for all this lose the company of her new champyon Parthonope, but, using the order of level coyle, she feasted them both indiferentlye of the dishes of one kynd of banquet, and reserved to herselfe a chaunge of dyet at her pleasure. But the Myllannoys, notyng her disloyaltie, entred into divers disposition of collor, somtime determined, for the revenge of the wrong which he seamed to receive, to kyl his corrivall, and manifest by open publication th'inordinate lubricitie of his ladye. Whiche

Companion of bed, or lieu tenaunt.

DISCOURSE III

he had performed accordingly, if naturall curtesye, with the regard of the honor which he held, had not prevayled above his just cause of indignation in that behalfe. Wherin, albeit he dismissed the revenge, yet coulde he not escape th'extreme passion of jelosie; whych so prickt him at the quicke, takyng awaye his desier of reste, and, in place of th'appetit of slepe, filled his head full of hollowe dreames and vayne visions, being in short time so transformed with fantasie, that there rose question of his sodayne alteration amongest divers his familyar frendes; wherof one, called Eucyo Marciano, no lesse deare unto him by aproved frendshippe then by the lawe of faythfull allyaunce and auncyente dissente, who not ignoraunte in the maladye of his kynsman, disposed himselfe to cure the disease and mortefye the cause with one medicyne. And beinge whollye privye to the practise of th'insacyable palliard Pandora, by the reporte of our late Romaine Iocunde, costed this knyght one daye as he walked all alone in a gallarye of his lodginge, reprehendinge his rashnes in this sorte:—'Yf I had as manye meanes to cure your disease (good cosin) as I am thorowlye perswaded of the cause of your sicknes, I woulde convert the grefe I fele in your behalfe into spedye endevor to releve your distresse. Ah las! what unhappye trade of late have you entred into, that so removes your senses out of their sege of reason, transforming the livelye colloure of youre face into a complexion of palenes, youre minde continuallye occupied in solitarye thoughtes, and wholye chaunged into a disposition contrarye to your aunciente order? Do you thinke that I am eyther ignorante of your passion or of the league of love concluded of late betwene th'unchaste Pandora and you? Ah! good cosin, I lamente not so muche your presente desaster, as I feare the fal of future inconveniences, like to thunder uppon you, if God prevente not the ylls which threaten you by takinge you out of the handes of that tyranous shee wolfe; whose poyson is of more perylous infection thenne that which dystilled from the breath of the fyrste Pandora, whom the two Greke poets do affirme to brewe the first vessel of venemous lycor that ever came into the world. Ah las! if reason would

Whore-monger.

Marcyano diswadeth his frende from Pandora.

suffer you as wel to deserne the doinges and detestable life of this open hypocryt even from the yeares of her infansye, as your follye is content to leade you to lysten to her cursed lore, you would not onlye seme satisfyed with the pleasure whiche hetherunto you have received, but also abhore the gredye apetyte of hers, so geven to hunte after contynuall chaunge. Neyther dismaye you at all, if the pleasure whiche you count peculiar to your selfe, bee imparted to another, far unmete to mache with you in that or anye other condicyon. For he whom you suspect to supplye the place of your absence, was the fyrst that tilled the craggye grounde of your insacyable mystres, gathering the first frutes of her virginytye. Which, notwithstanding, might be dispensed withal by reasonable tolleracion, if the nomber of them (besides) weare not infynet, that have alreadye battered the fort wherof you thinke yourselfe lyvetenant and only possessor.' (Rehersinge here in order the bedroll of those that she had admitted for her unlawfull bedfelowes.) Wherof, Parthonope, bowing a willing eare to the tale of his kynsman, was dryven into no small merveile at the pretye discours of the noble actes of this valiant souldyer of Venus. But Martiano, although he sawe argumentes of remors in the hart of his cosin, yet he thought his disease was not utterlye cured unlesse the cause were also taken awaye: wherfore, pursuing his intent with vehement perswasions, he requested him at last to leave those traffyques of love, and speciallye in case of adultery. 'For' (saieth he) 'they do not only dimynyshe the honour, age, renome, and welthe of him that foloweth them, but also they are hurtefull to the health of the soule, forbydden speciallye by the mouthe of God. And for your parte (me thinke) it were better to marye sum honeste gentylwomanne of your own calabre, susteyninge the honor of your house with passing the rest of your yeres in mutual socyetye with your lawfull wife, then, in consuming the best time of your age, to depend wholy upon the pleasure of a shamelesse and commen doxeye; who, when she hath sucked out the grene jewse of your youth, will not stycke (I warrant you) to procure the ende of your dayes with some miserable and untimly death.

Callinge.

DISCOURSE III

You are not ignorante, besides, I am sure, of the authoryties of divers histories, noting the great nomber of straung inconveniences, but specially perpetual infamy, which followeth as a dwe rewarde to their travel who, not regarding the dred commaundemente of God, and helthe of their soule, do defile the maryage bed of their neighbour, wherin for my part th'offyce of the frendshipe noryshed of long time betwen us, together with the respect of indissoluble consangwinytie, moves me, not only to expose my advice so liberally towards you, but also to present unto you this last requst with semblable importunytye—that, as wel for the commodityc of your selfe as consolacion of those who wishe youre advancement, you wil abandon the haunt of this barrayn, and woman void of al vertue; whose wicked disposition argues many wayes to late a repentaunce for you, if in short time you dispatch not your hande of her acquaintance.' Wherwith, dischardging the true part of a deare frend, he so conjured his kinsman, that, conferring his report with th'argument of lightnes he had alreadie noted in his mistres, he detested alreadie the remembrance of her beastly conversacion; and, because he woulde disclaime her acquayntance, companye, and effection which earst he bare her, at one instante he removed his lodginge to the further part of the cytie, where, within short time, he maryed a yong gentilwoman, daughter to one Eusebio Ioviall, no lesse vertuous, honest, chast, and curtuous, then the other proud, crewell, spightfull, and lascyvious; leaving, notwithstanding, his cast concubyn, Pandora, byg beliyed of his doing; who, noting not only his long absens from her, with the change of his lodging, but also that he was sodainly maryed, and she unware of his intent, wrapte the colloricke humors whiche assayled her for the presente, in a letter; wherin she was no nigard to spytte franklye the poison of her stomake, in uttringe at large the conseyts of her minde againste the disloyaltye of her perjured lover, as it pleased to tearme him. And being signed and sealed, she delivered it to a messenger convenient for the conveighe of suche embassage, with charg to performe the dispatch with expedicion; which, accordinglie, was accomplished. For her

maide Fynea, who earst had bene collcaryor in th' amorous affaires of Pandora, finding the knight in the companie of his kinsman Martiano, delivered him the letter of her mistris, importing this or the like effecte:— DISCOURSE III

Pandora writeth to Parthonope.

'The onlye experience of thy traiterous practise (Oh! parjured Parthonope!) is not only sufficient of it selfe to sturre uppe the juste exclamacions of al women againste the infidelitie in menne, but also hath sowenne suche seedes of perpetual slaunder in their attemptes of love hereafter, that thy desloyaltie towardes me (registred for ever in the remembrance of our secte) will hynder th' enterprises of others, whose intentes (tending peradventure to a more sinceritie of affection) deserve not to be repulsed by the merite of thy detestable falshod. And truly, for my part, I colde never have thoughte that faithe, purifyed thorowe the ryvers of so manye teares, confirmed by the witnes of a thousande sighes, and lastelye (for a more assuraunce) sealed with so manye othes, had had so smal harbor in the hartes of men now a dayes, if the profe of thy unhoneste dealinge had not argued it unto me with suche familiar example in myselfe that, alas! I curse (by good right) the constellacion that firste consented to my nativitie and unhappie procreacion, in sufferinge me to be governed by so harde a destynie, or deceived by the moste untrue and faithles sycophant that ever offred service to any pore gentlewoman. Albeit, if I had not bene so liberall to prostitute mine honoure for satisfyinge thy unchaste desyer, my conscience had bene easelye dispensed with all for the pennance of so greate a falte, my harte free from presente passion, and I apte enoughe to forgett the, whose stronge charmes of extreme love have so enchaunted my senses, and made me subject to thy remembrance, that the small time of thy absence is no lesse grevous unto me, then thy presente abuse geves mee juste cause to crye oute openly of thyne inordinat crueltie. Alas! is this the guerdon of th' unfained love I bare the? Is thy dispocition so unnaturall, to retorne the precious meritte of mine honoure with so unthankefull a meede of undeserved discurtesye? Have I loved the so entierlie, pre-

DISCOURSE III

ferringe the moste deare above all men in th' intralls of my harte, to be deprived of thy companie when I expect to reape the frutes of pleasure with everlastinge contynuance of our societie? Must I now abandon the fruicion of thy presence, being whollie resolved in thy affection, and when I crave thy soccour by greate necessetye? Thou are ignorante alas! in the case of my extremetie, neyther was thou ordeyned to beare part of the pinching panges whiche I feele in my wombe, proceding of the cursed seedes sowen by the in the bottom of my bellie, stirring even nowe in the partes of my tender sides with suche tormente, that onlye I pore wretche do beare the pennaunce of the falte dewe to us both. Yf the viewe of thy former pleasure, wherewith thou haste bene earst so franklie feasted at the bowntifull handes of thy Pandora, can not move the to compassion of her present greffe, spare at least to spil the blood of thyne owne liknes, derived of the dropps of the moste precious jewice in the; who harbored (as thy gueste) in the secrete corners of my tender flankes, takes daily norriture with increase of life by the vitall inspiracion of nature, and whose innocencie (if I dye by thy crueltie) will not faile in th' other worlde to summone the afore the highe troane of justice, wher I expect the juste revenge of th' undeserved wronge, wherwith (contrarye to the nature of loyall lovers) thou rewardest her, that earste loved the not so derelie as nowe she persecutes the with mortall hate, even untill the laste houre of her life.

PANDORA.'

The firste viewe of this letter was of harde disgestion to Parthonope; who, albeit the feare which he hadde that Pandora wold mordure (as she did indede) the frute congeiled of the substaunce of theim bothe in her intralles presented a certeine remorse afore the eyes of his conscience, yet, because she woulde never afore let him understande that she was with childe, hee thoughte it was but a newe meane to allure him eftesones to the traflicke of her affaires. Wherupon, using as litle regarde to the contentes of the letter as he made smal accompte of her that write it, dispatched the messenger with this short aunswere:—'Thou shalte' (sayeth

he) 'declare to thy mistrys that if she had heretofore ymparted to me th'effect of thy presente message, she would have disposed of mee and my frendeshippe at her pleasure, but nowe, seinge shee craves my assistaunce by necessitie, I committe her to the meede of her owne follie.' Whereof Pandora, beinge advertised by the heavie reapport of her Fynea, who also alledged dispaire eftsones to recover the frendshippe or companie of the knighte, entred furthwyth into suche dispocition of malencollie, wyth ymagynacions of revenge, that, convertinge th'appetite of her aunciente love into an humor of deadlie hate, doubted whether shee shoulde use force againste her selfe, for the spite of the villainy he had don to her, or persecute hym unto deathe whose life shee utterly detested. And waveringe thus in contrarietie of opinions, she soughte to appease somwhat the furye of her presente dolloure, by recordynge her greefe with these lamentable tearmes:— DISCOURSE III

'Alas!' (saithe shee) 'if this bee the rewarde of true loyaltie, what assuraunce maye wee reappose in constancie? Or what meede to bee expected in the vertue of suche unfained frendshippe, as I professed to this unthankeful and perjured knighte? Have I refused the service of so many gentlemenne, offringe franklie to employe their times under the becke of my commaundemente, to make my affection subjecte to one, who, havinge alreadie cooled oute of me the frutes of his desyer, smiles nowe at my simplicitie, and laughes to see mee languishe in dule? Ah! why were the eyes of my mynde so dymmed with the myste of fonde zeale that I colde not consider the common malice of menne now a dayes; who, preferring their humble service wyth all kinde of othes, dienge a thousande times a daye for oure sakes, yea! offringe their lyves to all kinde of perill, doo seame to remeine prisonners in the ward of oure good will, untill their fayned ymportunyties, prevailynge above the weake resistance of us poore wretches, do place theime in the possession of their desyer? And, beinge once made lordes over that whyche onely colde commaunde theym afore, God knowethe howe sone they revolte, torninge their fervente affection into a contempte of our fragilitie! If I had as carefullie caste all Pandora exclaimeth.

DISCOURSE III

argumentes, of future disquiet, as I was readie to open myne eares to the sugred breathe of his charmes, I hadde eschewed the evill wyth the cause; neyther hadde I stande (as I do nowe) readye to enter into the harde pennaunce of my former follie. Ah! moste unthankefull Parthonope! howe canste thou soo easelye forgette her who was no nigarde in satysfyenge thy desyers, and whose bewtie thou seemedeste earste to have in no lesse admiracion thenne if I hadde beene sente from above for th' only solace of thy lyfe? Hath thy presente crueltie prevailed whollie above the glory of thyne aunciente vertue? Or haste thou utterlie dismissed the remembraunce of thy othe, and protestacion of faythe, whyche oughte to call thy conscience to a remorse, forcinge a performaunce of thy promisse? Whereof, also,' (sayeth shee) castynge her waterie eyes down to her bigge bellie, 'thou hast lefte mee a pawne, whyche, witnessinge no lesse thy disloyaltye agaynste mee thenne advowching the frendeshippe thou haste founde at my handes, oughte to knocke at the dore of thy conscience for some consideracion of pitie towardes her, whome wythout cause thou doste shamefullie abuse. Oh! unhappye and wretched ladye that I am, in what companye canne I showe my heade, wherin the bignes of my bellie (bringing the blodd of shame into my face), will not accuse me of treason towardes my husbande, beinge so longe tyme absente? What wronge dothe the worlde to my wickednes, if every man salute me by the name of a common and arraunde strompette, who, defacinge her aunciente honour and house wyth the lascivious exercise of adulterous abuse, deserveth to be registred in the slaunderous boke of black defame with a crowne of infamy for ever? Wherunto, like as thy subtil practises (Oh! caytyfe knyghte!) hath advaunced me; so thy tyrany in the end shal take awaye the life of those ii who oughte to be farre more deare unto the, then thou seamest to accompte theim.' Wherwith, fallinge into alteracions of more furye, she began a cruell warre with her faire haires, printinge her nailes (without respecte) in the rosye dye of her faire face, bedewinge her bossome and skirtes of outwarde garmentes with the droppes of teares distilling from her cristal eyes, and entringe thus into the

Herselfe and the child with in her.

pageant of rage, had here plaied the laste acte of the tragedie in executinge herselfe, if the presence of Fynea had not prevented the facte; who, stirringe upp rather the appitit of revenge in her mistrys, then mynistringe perswacions to patience or moderation in her dollor, incensed her by all the wicked devises shee colde ymagyne, to wreake her juste anger uppon the villainous bodye of him that so synisterlie procured her passion of undeserved dule. Whereunto, albeit Pandora gave diligent eare, with desyer to put her advise into execution, yet, havinge not utterlie drayned her stomake of all complaints, renewed eftsones her exclamacion in this sort:—

Medea and Circe, ii great enchaunteresses.

'Ah! sayeth she why was not I traded in the magicall sciences of the Colchose Medea or th' Yytalyan Circe, whose conninge (workinge mervailous in the like affaires) hath lefte an ymortalitie to their names to al ages. Certainly if the heavens had revealed unto me any skil in the misterie of their artes, eyther sholde Parthonope be myne, or els woulde I raine the shower of vengeance uppon him, and her that enjoyeth the mede of my merite, with suche ympetuosytie, that the sequeile of the world sholde have no lesse cause to cronicle my doinges, then they seame commonly to confirme and allow th' actes of the ii former enchaunteresses. And thou, Fynea, sholdest have me to forgett him, in whose love I doate, although I wishe nothing so muche as his utter destruction. And now do I see the due rewarde of my former unchaste conversacion, for the fervente affection whiche I beare him, doth now yelde me doble usurye of the wanton libertie wherin I have lived hetherunto; neyther shall I be enjoyned to other penance for my falte then a loathesome dispaire which attendes (if I do not recover him whom I have lost, or have spedye meanes to revenge the wrong he hath don me) to cut in sunder the strings of my life. Wherfore, beyng resolved in some parte to folowe thy advise, so muste I also use thy traveile in th' execution of my first attempte, whiche is that thou goe furthwith to the vale of Cammonika in the contrey of Bressiant, which (as they saye) is not without great stoare of conninge sorcerers; amongest whom it is necessarie that thou learne (what so

DISCOURSE III

ever it coste) some enchauntement of so greate vertue, that it maye not onely restore me eftesones to the frendship of hym whome I thynke hath utterly forsaken me, but, by the conjuracion of theyr charme, have power to remove the vaile of his affection from hys newe wyfe, that, makyng no more accompte of her, he maye from hensfurth dissolve the league of amytie betwene them for ever. Wherein, if the effect of my desyer bee furthered by a successe of thy diligence, assure thy selfe, thy traveil shall be so thankefully imployed, that, chrystennynge the hensfurth by the name of my syster, there shalbe neither riches nor commoditye anye waye proper or due unto me, whiche shall not be common to us both.' Fynea, who was not so readie to obey her mystres in this develishe enterprise, as gyven of her selfe to bee a fyt minister of evill, discending with expedicion into the vale of Camonika, gat, by the helpe of those sprites and lymmes of the Devill inhabytynge that hellishe yland, certayne flowers gathered in the waine of the moone, with droagues, and other tromperie of witchecrafte, requisite for conjurers and suche as occupye the pernicious trade of enchauntynge. All whiche legerdemaines and devises of Sathan, were as availeable to the furthering of th' enterprise of Pandora as there is certentie or assuraunce in th' opperacion of that darke and hellishe science, what invocation so ever they make of the name of God; who, beyng the father and author of all troth, wyll never have the triumphant glorye of his name polluted wyth the cursed ceremonies of suche ydolatryes, neyther wyll he bowe downe his eares to the peticion of such diabolicall devynours, who, practisynge to seduce the simple sorte wyth charmes of sorceries, do preferre the absolute destruction of theyr owne soule. And trulye th' almightye (whose judgementes are inscrutable) is content somtyme to suffer those conjurers and enchaunters (the veray officers of hel) as wel for the scourge of our synnes as to manifeste theyr owne infidelitie, to worke many greate and incredible wounders—as we reade of the magicians in Egypte before Pharao; th' enchaunteresse stirrynge up the sprit of Samuell in the presence of Saule, kinge of the Hebrues; and Simon, the cojurer, honored as a God of the folishe prince and

Pandora sendes her mayd to practise with the witches of the vale.

Nether certeintie nor assurance in the art of enchantyng.

God suffred the magicions of Egypte to worke wonders in the sight of Pharao.

people of Rome—to th'ende the faythfull flocke (strengthened and confirmed, by the grace of the holye sprite) maye glorye in theyr assured belyef in the true God, by the peremptorye fal of those infedels, together wyth all suche as unhappelye lysten to theyr pernicious doctrine.

Here Pandora, seynge all her devises (accompanyed with a crooked fortune) retourne a successe contrary to her meanynge, began to enter into a newe passion of suche rage and dispaire, that she had even nowe dismissed the residue of her dayes by the fatall dome of her owne handes, yf she had not bene eftsones interupted by Fynea, who, for th' appeasinge of her present dule, preferred unto her the ayde of a graye frier, a greate ghostly father in that cytie, whom she affirmed to have wroughte mervelous effectes by the healpe of certeine distilled waters, tempered wyth the jewice of stronge hearbes, growynge secretlye within the intrailles of the earthe, the nature of hidden stoanes and mettals, pouders and seedes not knowen to manye, wyth diverse suffumigacions incident to witchecrafte: and who, in deede, was noted to have bestowed more of hys tyme in the studie of that darke arte and philosophie of Sathan then in tourninge over the sacred volumes of holye scripture and testament of the Lorde, whiche oughte to bee the only exercise of those that are cladd in the habite of religion.

The studye of scripture ought to bee th'exercise of the religious.

Beholde! here an example of greate vertue in oure Abbaye men; who, beinge appareilled in a simple habite in signe of humilitye, doe carye the devill in the cowle of theyr hoodes, and who (accordynge to Saint Augustin) beinge the chiefe pillors that susteine supersticion, are also the greatest frendes to ydolatrie, dimnynge the puritie of religion (which they oughte to honor and professe with sincere ymitacion) with a cloude of suche darknes of the devises of the devill, that th' onlye vapour of theyr poysoned infection is hable to corrupte the whole ayre wyth a contagiouse pestilence. Howe shoulde the ignoraunt bee guided in the righte waye to salvacion, if they whiche oughte to open the lyght of the gospell do give manifest examples of errours? Or how can the glorye of God bee renoumed amongest men, if they, whiche, standynge in the pulpit of truth, and ought sin-

Abbaies the chiefest pillors that menteine superstion and ydolatrye.

DISCOURSE III

cerelye to preache the lawe of the Lorde, do converte theyr dutie towardes the true religion into practises of nygromancie and tearmes of invocation of devils; unprofitable membres certeinlye, deservinge rather to bee utterlye weded out of the common-welth, then (norrished in the idle trade of an abbaye lownde) to be suffred (under the vaile of godlynes and devocion) to practise haynous conspiracies againste God and man? But what? doe I medle thys parte of my historye wyth th'office of the preacher, to whome it chiefelye belongeth to treat uppon the sondrye abuses committed daylye in nonries, and other lyke tenementes of Babylon? To this holye father, then, commes Pandora with a countenaunce all cladd wyth sorowe, declarynge the circumstaunce of her love passed, the cause of her present passion, with the whole discourse of her former lyfe hitherunto, cravynge (wyth greate intercession in the ende) th'assistance of his arte, for moderation in the martiredome which she endured by the fervent affection she beare to the knighte.

Abbayes and nonries tenementes of Babylon.

Freares bee covetous.

The freare (notwithstanding his vowe and straite othe of his order) had not his conscience so armed wyth the vertue of charitye, nor his handes so cleane washed from the covetous desyer of fylthie gaine, but he received certeine peces of golde of Pandora, whome he persuaded shoulde buye certeine drogues and other necessaries, whiche he thought convenient to the makynge of hys diabolicall confection. But, to be shorte, theis charmes and deceitfull perfumes of the freare were of equall operation in this enterprise to the hearbes and other healpes, lately gathered in the vale Camonika by the woman of Pandora; who, seinge herselfe utterly defyed of fortune, in receivynge semblable successe in all her magicall devises, expectynge withall a spedie retourne of her husbande, determinde to avenge the desloyaltie of her lover upon the frute sturryng in her owne wombe—being nowe vi monethes since she conceived—thinkyng she sholde never be voyde of desyer to see Parthonope, or at leaste to revenge his treason, untill she had utterlye extirped the rootes of that seede whiche he had sowen in the soile of her tender sydes. Oh crueltie more then barbarous! Is it possible that a gentelwoman of so tender yeres, derived of honest

parentage, norrished in civilitie, and, that whyche more is, a Christian, borne in the harte of Europe, shold so muche forget the feare of God and regarde to his lawes, as, in augmentynge the haynous faulte of the wronge alredye don againste her husbande by so many and unchaste adulteries, to committ in the ende an execrable effusion of the bloode derived of the droppes of her owne substance? Oh! howe cursed and unhappye is the condicion of them that, declinynge (for wante of grace) from the pathe of reason, do suffer theimselves to bee ledd by the lyne of fleshlye appetyt, the chiefest meane that makes us forgett God and all good order. For this Pandora, desyrous to cover her faulte, albeit not hable to hide her bigge bellye, assayed to destroye the creature (movynge within her) by crushynge her sydes wyth greate force, drynkynge cawdels made for the nonst, and swallowinge diverse other pouders of such strong confection, that theyr vehement operation within her, had bene able to prevaile above the strengthe of the highest complexion of the worlde. Albeit, seynge her expected successe of this beastelye pollecye was also denied her, she devised a laste meane for the accomplishment of her enterprise, whiche the veraye ennemy of nature (I am sewer) woulde abhorre to ymagine; which was that—seyng she coulde not be delyvered by the assistaunce of sorceries, purgacions, nor other pollecie whyche the arte of enchauntynge was hable to lende her —she resolved (as a bloddie boocher of her owne bloud) to brake the bed of th' infant within her entrails, and drive it out of her wombe by veray force. Wherein she was assisted by Finea, who, accordynge to the commaundement of her mystresse, carriynge a sylver basyn into the highest torret in the house, wente thether immediatlye bothe together; where, after the doares were shott on all sides, Pandora, with a troubled countenaunce, all pantinge for the horrour of the acte which she ment to execute, beholdynge her bellye with serpentine eyes sparklynge with flames of furie, sayed unto her mayde:—'Like as, alas! thou knowest, Finea, howe extremelye I am delte withall at the handes of the thrise wretched Parthonope, who (without anye respect to the paine which I endure) hath utterly disclaimed mine acquaint-

Suggestion of the fleshe makes us sonest forget God.

A develishe devise of Pandora.

DISCOURSE III

ance, wyth lesse regarde to preserve the seedes whyche he hathe grafted and lefte growinge within me, even so thou arte not ignoraunt of th' indevour I have used to reclaime hym, and rampyer myselfe eftsones in his favor; wherof the one is no lesse unlikelye then the other daungerous. And, beynge spyted of fortune, heaven and earthe seame also to bende the force of theyr malice againste mine attemptes. Albeit I coulde somwhat moderate the extremetie of my passion, yf the viewe of my greate bellye dyd not renewe the rage of my fever; wherein I dye a thousande tymes, havynge anye thyng afore mine eyes that eyther representeth his licknes, or moveth any cause of remembraunce of that detestable wretche, who (as I hope) shall never take pleasure in any child of his engendred in the bodye of Pandora. And as I have assayed diverse wayes (as thou knowest) to discharge me of this burden, wherin I have nothynge prevayled, because my destenie contends against my endevor, even so, beynge not hable any longer to conceile my faulte, nor cover my wombe swelled with the wycked sede of his generacion—and seynge withall my husband is now upon the point of his returne—I am determined to commit my life to extreme perill; to th' ende to dispatche me of this burden, which I hate as much as other women take pleasure to beare and bryng forth with so great contentement. And, if I coulde as largelye commande over him as I have power to worke the spyte of his wrong uppon the pawne he hath lefte within me, I assure thee these handes should make no lesse straunge anotomy of his carcas, then I mean forthwith, in thy presence, to dismember the monster which, by his acte, I fele stirre in the inner partes of my raines.' Wherein Finea, hearing this develish resolucion, preferred persuasions to the contrarie, alledgynge that the horror were to great that a mother shoulde become the tyrannous murdresse of herselfe and childe at one instant. 'And' (saith she) 'touchinge your being with child, there be meanes inough to kepe it secret without using any crueltye, in killyng th' innocent creature, which ought not to beare the penaunce of the faulte of the father.' 'Tush! tush!' saith this she wolfe and merciles Medea, 'that evil is but light

The evil is but light where councell takes place.

where counsel takes place. Do awaye these persuasions and dispose thyselfe to assiste me; for otherwise thou shalt see me dye in thy presence, and then thy preachynge shalbe in vayne to her that is absolutly resolved to pursue the ende of her meanynge.' 'What is it then that I shall doe?' saith Finea. To whom (as a cruell Megera comminge out of the hollow and darke places of th' infernal valleys) she enjoyned her this fyrst charge:—'Get thee upp,' saith she, 'upon that high coffer there, and I wil spred my bellye alonge upon the grounde, with my backe upwarde. And so, wyth all thy force, thou shalte leape upon my reynes; whych I hope wil be a meane to open an issue for this cursed burden whiche is so grevous for me to carye. Wherin, if thou use th' uttermost of thy force, thou shalte restore me to spedye contentement; but if thou spare to employe thy whole strength, thow shalte prolonge my paine, drivynge me to make myne owne handes the ministers of my meanynge.' Finea, not lykyng greatly the charge of suche commission, and muche lesse the execucion in so horrible a maner, althoughe the terrour of the fact troubled her for a tyme, yet, beynge of longe tyme acquainted wyth the condicions and crueltye of her mystres, mounts upon the highe chest, leapinge seaven or eyghte tymes together upon the backe of Pandora, wyth suche impetuositie, that anye man woulde have thought that so many blowes, wyth the heavye swaigh of all her bodye, had bene hable to have broken the bones of her backe and dispatched the mother and childe together. But all these traffickes beynge in vayne, prolonged but the payne of Pandora; who, doublyng her rage wyth this repulse of her enterprise, entred into devises of more mischiefe and tyraunie not almost to be talked of. What hart alas! is so endurated wyth the mettall of hardnes, but the horror of this hellishe crueltye, wyll move it to destil drops of bloud? What countenaunce so assured that cane wythhold hys teares, or not shrinck at the tyranous disposition of this lyonesse? Or what heares wyll not stande up at the tragicall discours of this strange kynde of chylde bearynge?

Truelye, I knowe that vertuous ladyes (sprinkled wyth the dewe of pytie) wyll not onelye tremble at the remem-

DISCOURSE III

braunce of the inordinate crueltye of this cursed mother, but also open the conduits of their compassions, weping on the behalfe of the torment wherin unnaturally she plunged the innocent impe which nature had formed of the substance of herselfe; who, converted from the shape of a woman into the disposition of a devel, raginge without measure, that she coulde not be delivered, howled out at laste with a horrible crye full of impietye and blasphemye in this sorte:— 'Seynge' (sayth she) 'that both God and the devell denie me their assistance, I will (in spyghte of their powers) ryd me of thee, oh! cursed and execrable creature.' Wherwith, possessed wholye with the spirit of furie, having her eyes sonke into her head, her stomake panting, and her face all full of black bloud, by the vehemencie of the conflicte which she had indured, began to leape with al her force from the toppe of the coffer down to the ground, brosing her sides with her handes and playinge on the drum with her fystes upon her great bellye, with such huge blowes that, felyng even now the lytel creature within her removed from his place, redye to drope oute of her wombe, called for the socors of Finea, who standynge in place of a midwyfe, received (in a silver basyn) an infant male, unlawfullye conceyved, bedewed as yet wyth the wet soddes of his wicked mother, sprauling and breathing with a litell ayre of lyfe: whiche doloros spectacle, movyng Finea to present compassion, drive her into teares of great dule; as well that for she sawe so fayre a creature driven out of his habitacion before his due terme, and without the consent of nature, as also to see it redie to be layed upon the polluted alter of immolations, for an offering to the devill, afore it weare washed and purified thorowe the sacred sacrement of baptisme. Oh! horrible and execrable condicion of an Italian, who, being fostered in the myrie vale Camonycka, amongst the wyches and cursed enchaunterers, socked there the vice of her nurce wyth the mylke of her pappe. Albeit, I coulde make comparison of the like crueltie executed in the greatest cytie of Fraunce by a gentilwoman of that contrye, who, beinge newly delivered of the burden of her bellye, made a beastlye sacrifice of it in the fyre, and that wyth the consent

Paris.

and in the presence of the detestable pallyard * that begat it, deservynge both to be invested with the tytell of cursed parentes and blodye bochers of the sedes congealed of theyr owne substaunce, savynge that the ende of this infortunat infant was more tragicall, and the doings of his mother more detestable; who, excedinge the brutall crueltye of the wolfe, tygresse, or lyonesse, ravenynge amongest the flocke of lytell lambes in the fatt and fertyll feldes of Libia, seinge her thus discharged of her burden began also to dysmysse the greatnes of her dolor, and, beholdinge with her eyes (shyninge lyke the blase of two torches with the flame of furye) the newborne creature sprawling in the basyn began to whett her tethe, shakinge her heade with horrible regards, prognosticatinge the laste acte of the rage whiche she hadde yet to playe; saying unto Finea:—'Dost thou not see howe this lyttel beaste resembles alreadye the image of his parjured father? Beholde now, I praye the, his countenaunce and marke the sondry liklehods that even now appeare in his face, arguing undoubtedly that (if lyfe woulde geve leave to his inclynacion) his detestable disposicion woulde be nothinge inferyor to the villanie of him whose trayterous disloyaltye hath made me (as thou seest) the cursed mynister of inordynat creweltye. And if I had the lyke power over him that is the cause of this unnatural passion, I would assuredlye enjoyne him such penaunce, that his juste chastysment shoulde import a terror to all traytors that hereafter shoulde seke to seduce anye ladye by sugred words.' Wherewith, bendinge her lokes towardes the lyttell impe (hastinge to his ende by the seconde conflicte hee hadde endewred by hys mother and her mayde afore his eyes weare unsealed to see the light of this worlde) she wished eftsones the presens of Parthonope. 'Upon whome' (sayth shee) 'syth I am unhappelye denyed to wreake my vengaunce in suche sorte as I woulde, at leaste I will content myselfe for the tyme to see the ponyshed in the place of him whose pycture thow rightlye presentes, as a trewe patorne shaped of the masse of his substance. And, seinge thy destinye is to incurre the penaunce due to thy father, the payne of thy execucion shalbe nothinge inferyor to the meryt of his execrable falt. Wherin,' sayth shee,

* Whoremaister.

DISCOURSE III

'arme yourselves (oh! my handes) with corage, and shrinke not to bee the mynisters of the ponishiment which my tongue hath pronounced! Rejoyce, oh my harte! in the effusion of his blodd, whose death brings repose to the long passion of thy dolors! And you, mine eyes, laughe your full, to se the dismembringe of him whome I mean to offer as a sacrafyse of vengaunce on the behalfe of Parthonope, whose remembraunce (with the blodde of his son) I will presentlye rote out of my minde for ever!' Certenlye, good ladyes, my harte, abhorring no lesse the remembraunce of this bychfoxe, then my spirite, trobled with tremblinge feare at the contynaunce of her creweltye, gives such impediment to my penne that it is scarce hable to discribe unto you the laste act of her rage: wherin this lymme of th'infernal lake, not worthye any longer to beare the name of a woman, procedinge to th'ende of her enterprise, takes up her sonne with her bloodye and murderinge handes, whom, without all compassion, and contrary to the order of a christian, she beates with all her force againste the walles, paintinge the postes and pavements in the chamber with the blodde and braynes of the innocent creature newe borne. Wherwith, not yet contented nor satisfyed in her rage, she takes in eyther of her handes one of the tender legges of the child now deade, and, deviding them as the bocher joynts his lambe or yonge goate which he layes upon his staulle to be sould, fell of a sodayn laughter in signe of the greate pleasure she toke in this execution, wishing, notwithstanding, to enter into the same exercise with him of whom this deformed carrion (as she tearmed this dismembred infant) toke his firste beginninge. Here, if I shoulde preferre the perticuler discours of the exploits of this second Medea and execrable monster of our time, I could not escape (I am sure) without the secret grudges of some, who, havinge made large sale of their honor at to lowe a price, and getting in like sort the byt of frantike jalosye betwen their teth, do stodye nothing but the art of reveng. Albeit because the vertue of honest and chast ladies shal shine the clearer by the darke eclipse of such common enemyes of the whole secte femenyne, I wil yet treat of the tyrany of this Pandora, who

reserved the extreame pointe of her Jewishe creweltie until the last act of her tragedye. For, marteringe the dead childe, and treadinge it under her fete, she thrust her hande under his shorte rybbes, and taking out his hart gnawed it (as a bych of Hercania) betwene her teth into littell morsels, saying that shee hoped one daye to provyde the like banquyt for Parthonope, whiche shoulde confirme the quyet she felt in the present death and destestable execucion of his image and likenes. And, having her hand yet dyed with the blodd of this guiltles impe of nature, shee cold not be ryd of the importunat devil that possessed her, until she had brought the ryver of her rage unto th' extreme brinke of tyrannye, neyther could her harte be brought to appeasement so longe as her eyes fed upon the viewe of the deade infant. Wherfore, callinge in a great mastyphe cur, she gave him (by pecemeale) the members of her childe, an act suer of no lesse detestacion afore the high throne of God then to be abhorred of all the world. Ah las! have th' Ytalyan mothers no other tombes for their children, then to bury them in the belly of a dogge? Be these the teares wherewith they accompanye them into the shrouding shete? Is this the curtesy of Italye, or a creweltie derived of the barbarous nacion? But how cold she expose other frewtes outwardly then according to the nature of the spirite which possessed her within? For the devill, beinge seased of her hart, made her body and other members the mynisters of her wil: which God doth oftentymes suffer, as wel for the due correction of haynous faults as also for an example and terror of all offenders in the like affayres.

I am lothe, good ladyes, to passe any further in the pursute of this dolorous tragedye; because (your eyes alredy wearyed with wepinge) methinke, I see also, your eares offer to close themselves against the report of this Pandora, whose only offence had bene enough to staine your whole secte with perpetual infamie, if the pure chastitie of so many of you offred not to confute the slaunder by your vertue only. Neither can the impudente and wicked liffe of suche double curtalls (as shee was) impayre th' estimacion of them that, wyth th' intente of pure integritie, do rather give

DISCOURSE III

suck to their honor with the milke of simplicytie, then, being Italyonated with all subteltyes, trustinge onlye in the humor of their owne braine, do fall at laste into the common slaunder of all the worlde. For a famylyar profe wherof I leave you to skanne the order and doinges of this Pandora, who, waxinge nowe somewhat colde in her former passions of frensye and rage, began to be pinched with the panges incydente commenlye to all women in the paynfull travell of childe bearinge. Wherof, goinge to bed, shee caused certeyn baynes to be provided; wherin washinge herselfe, the next daye (beinge hallowed and a feaste of great solempnytye) she was caryed in a rych coche to vysitt the companie of other ladyes, amongest whome she was not worthye to kepe place, being the shamefull bocher of her own blood and wicked ennemy to the life of man.

Herein is to be noted the destruction of a woman banished the pallays of reason; together with the due mede of their merytt, who, for the respect of a lyttell pleasure, (of no more contynuance then a moment) do put their honour upon tearmes of infamye, and their soules in hazard of everlastinge tormente. Here the adulterers maye see howe justelye God ponysheth their infydelytie, and breach of othes towardes their husbands. Let also the yong ladyes and lyttel girls learne to direct the cours of their youth by the contrary of this example; and, beinge once registred in the boke of maryage, let theim stand upon their guard for falling into the like folies. For ther is nothing committed in secret, but in the end it bursts out to a common brute: which our savior Christ affyrmeth by the mouthe of the prophet, sainge, that what so ever is done in the darkest corner of the house shalbe published in the end in open audience. And he who sekes moste to conceile his faulte, is not onlye (by the permission of God) the first opner of the same, but also beares the badge of shame afore the face of the world, and standes in daunger of grace in the presence of him from whom no secret canne be hydde.

# DISCOURSE
# IV

An Albanoyse Capteine, beinge at the poynte to dye, kylled his wyfe, because no man should enjoye her beawtie after his deathe.

## DISCOURSE IV

### THE ARGUMENT

It may seame to some that delighte in the reporte of other men's faltes, with respect rather to take occasion of synister exclamacion then be warned by their evils to eschewe the like harmes in themselves, that I have bene to prodigall in notinge the doinges and lives of diverse ladies and gentlewomen declininge by misfortune from the path of vertue and honour, only to sturre up cause of reproche and leave to confirme their fonde opinion. Albeit, as their errour appereth sufficiently in the integretye of my meaninge, so I hope th' indifferent sort will geve an other judgement of my entente; the rather for that I have preferred these discourses, both for the proffit of the present glorye of them that bee paste, and instruction of suche as bee to come; seing withal they discover more cause of rebuke and vices more heynous in men, then any we finde committed by women. And albeit the historye last recyted hath set fourth in lyvely collours the furye and madd dispocition of a woman forced by disloyaltie, yet if a man maye any waie excuse synne, it maye in some sorte be dispensed withall, or at leaste with more reason then the tyranous execution followinge, committed by a man without occacion; where a certaine jelousye sprong of an unjuste myslyke (as she thought) is readie to cover the falte of Pandora. For what is he so ignorante in the passions of love that will not confesse that jelosye is an evill exceedinge all the tormentes of the world, supplantinge oftentymes bothe wytt and reason in the moste wise that be, specially when appeareth the lyke treason that Pandora perswaded herselfe to receive by him that forsoke her. But for th' other, how can he be acquited from an humor of a frantike man, who, without any cause of offence in the world, committes cruel execution upon his innocente wife, no lesse fayre and fournished in al perfections, then chast and verteous without comparison. Neyther is joylowsye

Jelosye excedes al the tormentes in the worlde.

the cause of morder, considringe that the opynion is no sooner conceyved then there followeth (as it were) a distrust of the partye that thinkes to receive the wronge, with an indifferent desyer to theim both to stande upon their gard, in sort lyke ii enemyes workinge the mutuall destruction the one of the other. Whereof, leaving the judgement to theim that be of good stomake to disgest all kindes of meates, or can carye a traine to bukle with the fumes of everye brothe that is offred theim, I have here to expose unto you a myserable accident, happening in our tyme, whiche shall serve as a bloddy skaffolde, or theaterye, wherin are presented such as play no partes but in mortal and furious tragideies.

DURINGE the sege and miserable sacke of Modona (a cytye of the Mores, confyning upon the sea Peloponese, not farr from the straite of Ysthmyon, by the whiche the Venetians conveighe theire great traffique and trade of marchandise) Baiazeth, th' emperour of the Turkes, and great grandfather to Sultan Solyman who this daye governeth the state of th' oriente, used so many sortes of inordinat cruelties in the persecution of those wretches whom fate, with extreme force of his warr, had not onlye habandoned from the soyle of their ancient and naturall bode, but also (as people ful of desolation and voide of succour every waye) forced them to crave harbor of the lymytrophall townes adjoyning their countrey, to shroude ther weary bodyes, bledinge still with the woundes of their late warre, and overcome besides wyth the violence of hungar and cold—ii common enemies that never faile to followe the campe of miserie. And as in a generall calamitie everie man hath his fortune, so, amongest the unhappie crewe of these fugitives and creatures full of care, there was one gentleman no lesse noble by discente then worthelye renowmed by the glorye of his own actes; who, accompting it a chyefe and principal vertue to withstande the mallice of fortune with magna-

Hunger and colde, 2 common enemies attendinge the campe of miserie.

DISCOURSE IV

nimitie of mynd, thought it not also the office of a noble hart to yeld to the sentence of adversitie, or geve any place to the injurie of present time, consideringe that, in everye distresse, Fortune beareth the greatest swaighe; whose mallice is neyther of perpetuitie, nor yet to be feared of such as have their harts armed with assurance in vertue. For as she is no lesse uncertaine of herselfe then her doinges full of mutabilitie, so, accordinge to th'advice of the philosopher, she is to be used with suche indifferencie of all estates, that wee neade neyther laugh when she smyles, nor feare when she threates. Neither hathe she anye to followe the chariot of her victorie but the caitiffe or cowarde, and suche as are denied the assistaunce and benifet of trewe vertue. This gentleman (whom mine author termeth by the name of Pierro Barzo) wearie even nowe with drawinge the heavie yocke of harde exile, left the rest of his contrymen and companions of care complaininge their mutuall myseries together, and retired to the ryche and populous cytie of Mantua; where his cyvell governmente, and prudent behavior (accompanied with a singuler dexteritie in exploytes of armes, and other exercises of chevalrye, arguinge th'unfayned noblenes of his mynde) gave suche a shewe of his vertue, that he was not onlye in shorte tyme intertained of the Marques and governour there, but also made generall of the whole armie of footemen. Where, enjoyinge thus the benefyt of his vertue—who commonly yeldes no lesse successe to suche as imbrace her with true ymytacion, and treade the pathe of her loare with semblable sincerite of mynde—he had there with him at the same instante his wyfe, beinge also of Modona, derived of no lesse nobilytie then he, and nothinge inferiour in all gyftes of nature and ornamentes of vertue. For touchinge her bewtie, seaming of suche wonderfull perfection that it was thoughte nature was dryven to the ende of her wittes in framinge a pece of so great excellancie, they dowted not to geve her therby the tytle of the faire Helene of Grece. Nether was she lesse meritorious for her vertues; being blessed therwith so plentifully at the handes of th'Almighty, that it was doubted to the writers of that tyme whether God or nature deserved the greatest prayes in forminge so perfecte a crea-

In everye mischiefe fortune beareth the greatest swaighe.

No man within the daunger of fortune but suche as lake assurance in vertue.

Vertue yeldes good frutes to such as embrace her unfaynedly.

ture. If this were a consolation and singuler contentment of the pore Modonoyse—waighinge earste in the ballance of his unhappye fortune, denied anye more to enjoye the fredome of his contrye, dryven by force from the auncient succours and solace of his frendes, wandringe in wooddes and deserte places unknowne, and (that whiche worse is) lefte onely to the mercie of hunger and coulde, with expectation to fall eftesones into the handes of hys enemyes; and nowe to bee taken from the malice of all theis miseries and restored to a place of abode, richesse and entertainement sufficient for sustentation, to beare office and authoritie amongeste the best, and rampierd besydes within th' assured good will and opinion of the chiefe governor of a contreye—I appeale to th' opinions of those who earst have changed their miserable condicion, or state of adversytie, with the benefyt and goodnes of the lyke fortune. Or if, againe, he had cause to rejoyce and make sacrifice to his fortune, that had gyven hym a wyfe, noted to be the odd image of the worlde for beautye, behaviour, courtesey, and uprighte dealyng, constant wythout cause or argument of dishonesty, and that (whiche is the chiefest ornement and decoracion of the beautie of a woman) to bee of disposition readye to obeye her husbande, yeldinge hym suffraintye with a deutifull obedience, with other vertues that made her an admiration to the whole multitude, and her lyfe a spectacle to the ladyes of our age to beholde and imitate the like vertues—I leave it to the judgement of that smal number of happy men who (by a speciall grace from above) are ordeined to enjoye the benefyt of so rare and precious a gyfte. This couple, thus rejoycinge the retourne of happy lyfe, resigned withall their teares of auncient dule, and embraced the gyfte of present time, with intent to spend the remaineder of their yeres in mutual consolacion and contentement of mynde. Wherein they were assisted wyth a second blessyng of God; who, for the increase of theyr new comfort, sent them a doughter, who in beautye, vertue, and all other gyftes of grace, dyd nothynge degenerate from the patterne and mould from whence she was derived. Wherof she gave great showes as nature seamed to increase her yeres and

The chiefest vertue in a wife is to be obedient to her husband.

DISCOURSE IV

conferme her in discrecion. But what assuraunce is ther in the pleasure of people, seinge the worlde hitselfe is appointed his date, whiche he can not passe; or why shoulde we repose a perpetuitye in our worldlye afaires, seinge that both theyr continuance and confidence endes wyth the lengthe of tyme? And Fortune, who is alwayes jelouse of the ease of man, and not content to let us lyve longe in quiet, is alwayes laying her ambushe, devisyng howe to interrupte oure felicitie. And as she is blinde of herselfe, and lesse certeintie in her doinges, so she forgettes not to discover her conspiracies when we leste thinke of her, and invade us when we accompte us moste sewer of her frendshippe. Wherof she gave a manifest declaration in the person of this faire ladye; from whome she toke her deare husband in the flower of his yeres, and she not yet confermed in age and discretion hable to beare and withstande th' ordinarye assaultes of the worlde. Whiche she founde also of more uneasye tolleracion, as wel for the fervent zeale and affiance whiche lawe of kynde dyd bynde her to beare to her late spouse and loyall husbande, as, also, for that she sawe herselfe lefte amongest the handes of straungers, farre from her parentes and frendes, voyde of refuge in her owne countrye, and withoute a heade to defende her from the malice of men, whiche commonlye rageth wyth more extremytie againste weake and desolate widowes and pore fatherles orphanes then againste theim that are hable to withstande their malice, and represse theyr violence wyth equall power. And, albeit she was lefte to her owne lybertye to lyve as she lyste, (as you have harde) and not yet felyinge the burden of xx wynters (an age fyt to engender susspicion of the evell disposed) yet, havinge no lesse care to prevent the malice of slaunder then to kepe in entyer the small revenue lefte unto her by her husbande, she toke order wyth her domesticall affaires accordyng to her present fortune. And so, dismissing her ordinarye traine of servantes, retyred to a brother of hers, whiche dwelte also in the same towne; wher, after the funerals of her dead husbande were performed with sufficient teares and dueties appertaynynge, she qualifieth some what her dule for him that was dead,

Fortune is alwayes jalouse of the ease of man.

The malice of the world rageth most upon widows and fatherles children.

The use of the nedle a convenient exercise for any degree of women.

with the dayly view of her yong doughter (the lyvely ymage of her father), sometyme also excercisinge the indevor of the nedle (a recreacion moste convenient for widowes and all honeste matrones) never beinge seene abrode but of holye and great festivall dayes, when she wente in devoute maner to the churche to here the divine service of God; beinge unhappelye espied (for all that) of an Albanoys captaine, a noble gentelman thereabout, havinge for the credit of his vertue and valiantnes in armes the charge of certayne troopes of horsemen; who, glauncynge at unwares uppon the glysterynge beames of her beautie, became so desyrous eftsones to encounter the same, that, with the often viewe of her stately personage and generall fame of her many vertues, he became so in love with her, that (for spedye ease of his present griefe) he was dryven to put his request upon tearmes; makynge fyrste his sighes and sadde countinance, his sollitary complexion of face often gyven to chaunge, his dolorous state and pityfull regardes of the eye when he was in her companye, forced nowe and then to abandon the same because he could not kepe hym frome teares, his often gretynge her wyth salutations in amarous order, courtyng her nowe and then wyth letters, dyttyes, and presentes of great pryce, wyth a thousande other vayne importunityes whych love dothe ymagine to animate his soldiours, his chiefest ministers to bewraye hys intente and solicite his cause. Whereof the effecte retourned no lesse frustrate, then the devise yt selfe oughte to seam vayne in the eye of all wise men: for she whose harte coulde not be earste perced wyth the malyce of her former fortune, nor be brought to stowpe to the lure of adversitye, thoughte it a greate faulte to let love or folye make anye breache, wher so many hoate assaultes and causes of dispayre had bene valiauntlye resysted and utterly repulsed. For profe wherof, beinge wholly wedde as yet to the remembrance of her deade husband, she woulde neyther admitt hys clyentes, nor gyve audience to his embassadours, but dismissed bothe the one and the other with semblable hope: whiche broughte the captayne in suche case, that it seamed to hym a harder matter to compasse the good wyll of his ladye, then to

DISCOURSE IV

governe an armye or to plante a battrye wyth the advauntage of the grounde and place. Neither was he hable to withdrawe his affection or mortifye the fyer newly burst oute to flame; because the remembraunce of her beautye, the often viewe of her vertue enlarged by the generall fame of all men, together wyth the noblenes of her race enrolled in the recordes of antiquitye, presented a more desyere in hym wyth care to obtayne her, and aggravated his griefe in beinge repulsed of that whiche his harte hadde alredye vowed to honor tyll the extreme date of hys dayes. Neyther had he the face eftesones to attempte her of hymselfe, and muche lesse to desyste from the purseute of hys desyere; but, beynge at the pointe to incurre the hazarde of dispayre, beholde! love preferred a newe and moste sewer meane, wyllynge hym to crave the assistaunce of her brother; who, beynge hys deare frende and companion in armes in the servyce of diverse princes afore tyme, he made no lesse accompte of his furtheraunce, then yf he had alredye gotten hys frendshippe. Wherfore delaying no moment of tyme, but plying the ware whilest the water was warme, he accoasted the yong man at a convenient tyme and roved at hym in thys shorte sorte:—'It is, my deare frende and compagnion, a vertuous disposition to be readye in well doyng, and easye to assiste honeste requestes: whiche to your nature hathe bene alwayes no lesse peculiar then to me nowe a courage in so honeste a case to crave your ayde. Neyther can the vertue of true frendshippe more lyvelye appeare, or th'office of assured frendes more amplye bee discerned, then in makynge the greffe of the one common to bothe, and beare the gyfte of tyme and fortune indifferentlye wyth mutuall affection and lyke zeale on bothe partes. Wherein, for my parte, I woulde I had as good meane to make declaracion of my true harte towardes you, as of longe tyme I have vowed to be yours to the uttermoste of my power, and you no lesse desyer to doo me good then your diligence, and assistance of frendshippe, is moste hable to stande me in steade in my present case, of no lesse importance then the verye safegarde of my lyfe.' Which laste wordes made the Modonoyse replye with lyke

The captain to his frende.

Th'office of true frendshippe where in it consistes.

franke offer of mynde, protestynge unto hym by the fayth of a soldiour, that, if ever he felte anye mocion in hymselfe to doe hym the least good of the worlde, his desyer was double to requite it; proferinge herewith, for a further shewe of his good meaninge and declaration of fayth, to racke his powre on his behalfe, so farre fourth as eyther lyfe, lyving, or honour, woulde beare him. But he whose desyer tended not to things impossible, nor soughte to maintaine warre againste the heavens, reapposinge muche for himselfe in the offer of his frinde, thought the conquest was halfe wone when he had promissed his assistaunce. And because ther lacked nothing but to utter his griefe, he tolde him that the thynge he desyered woulde bringe advauncement to them bothe. 'And because,' saith he, 'I will cleare the doubte whiche seames to trouble you, you shall understande that the beautye, gyftes of grace, and other honest partes in your syster, have so inchaunted my senses, that, havyng alredye loste the use of my former lybertie, I can not eftesones be restored without the spedye assistaunce of her good will: neyther have I other powre of myselfe, or consolation in my present extremitye, then suche as is derived of the hope which I have hereafter to enjoye her as my lawfull wyfe. For, otherwayes, I am as voyde of foule meanynge to worke her dishonnor for the fervent love I beare her, as free from intente to procure so greate a spot of infamie to the house whiche norrished you both in so great honour. And, to be plaine with you, the glymerynge glances of her twinklynge eyes, together with a princely majestie which nature hath lente her above the rest of the dames of our dayes, hath made my hart more assaltable and apte to admitt parley, then eyther the noyse of the canon or terrour of the enemye, howe greate so ever they have appeared, have hertofore feared me: whiche makes me thinke that ther is eyther som celestial or divine mysterie shrowded under the vayle of her beautye, making me therby yelde her honor in hope of preferment; or els, by the angry consent of my cursed destines, it is shee that is appointed to paie th'interest of my former lybertie, in transformynge my auncient quiet into a thousand anoyes

DISCOURSE IV

of uneasye tolleracion. And, albeit I have hetherto reserved the maydenhed of my affection, and lyved no lesse free from th'amarous delites or desyers of women, yet being nowe overtaken and tyed in the chaines of true affection, I had rather become captive, and yelde myselfe prisoner in the pursute of so fayre a ladye, then to have the honor of the greatest victorye that ever happened to captayne, by prowesse, or pollicie, or dynt of cruell sworde of his valiaunt soldiours. Wherfore, as your authoritie wyth your syster, is rather to commaunde then entreat, and by the frendshippe whiche hath remeined indissoluble betwene us from the begynnynge, never gyvynge place to any peryll what so ever it were, I conjure you, and as my last requeste beseche you, to ayde me herin so farfurth as your diligence maye seame to woorke my desyer to effecte.' Wherunto the Modonoyse replyed wyth greate thankes for the honor he offred hym and his syster, whome he halfe promised alredye to frame accordynge to his expectation, promisinge hymselfe a greate good happ, not onely in entryng into allyaunce wyth so noble a gentleman, but also that he shoulde be the worker of the same. Wheruppon embracynge eche other —the one glad to see so happy a successe lyke to folowe his busines, the other no lesse joyfull to have so fytt a meane to manifest his frendshipp towardes his frende—departed with semblable contentement;—the one to his lodging with a thousand hammors in his heade till he sawe the effecte of his dryfte, the other with no lesse griefe of minde till he had performed the expectation of his charge. Wherein, he began immediatlye to practise wyth hys syster, whome he founde of a contrary opinion, excusynge herselfe wyth the care she had of her doughter, whome, she sayed, she would neyther leave alone, nor commit herselfe to the order and governement of straungers, at whose handes there is as great doubte of good entratye, as small helpe or hope of amendement, beinge once made their vassall and subject by lawe of maryage. 'Besides (syr),' saith she, not without some teares, 'it is not yet a yere synce I lost hym, whom if I loved by awe beinge onlyve, I oughte with no lesse duety to honor after his death. Neyther colde I avoyde the juste murmure

and ordinary suspicion of the people, yf I should seame more hastye to yelde my affection to another, then readye to perform my duetye and ceremonies of dule to him that is dead; and that within the yere afore the funerall be fully ended. The widowes lyfe is also pure of itselfe, bounde to no care nor controlement of any, and so acceptable before God, that th'apostle doubteth not to accompte her amonge the number of the religious, yf, after she have once tasted of mariage and restored agayne to her lybertie, she content herselfe wyth the fyrste clogge or burden of bondage, lyvinge after in ymitacion of true vertue. Besides the holy man Sainct Augustin diswadeth all wydowes eftesones to marie, advisinge theim to mortifie suche mocions as the fleshe is apte to sturre uppe and norrishe, by contemplacion, and prayer, and true sinceritie of lyfe; saynge further that they are accompted afore God amongest the nomber of chaste and pure virgins. And because it may bee, peradventure, th'oppinion of some, that the burden of widowed is grevous and almost intollerable unto me—presuming the same rather by the greenes of my youth (not yet confirmed in rypnes of yeres and discretion) then upon any good or assured grounde to justifye theyr opinion—I assure you I feele myselfe so plentifully assisted with the spirite of grace, that I doubte no more to withstande all temptations and vaine assaultes which the wicked instigations of the flesh may here after minister unto me then heretofore in tender yeres, when nature denied anye such mocion to stur in me, I lived free and voyde of such provocation. And for end, good brother, my hart, devininge diverslye of the successe of this mariage, threatneth a further mischiefe to fall upon me, and to late a repentance for you that is the unfortunat causer of the same.' Here her brother, knowing it a fault in all women to here themselves well spoken of, and yet a chiefe meane to wynne theim to fede their humour with flattering praies, began to joine with her in commendacion of her honestie, affirmynge her chaste conversation to bee no lesse meritorious since she was wydowe then her pure virginitie generally allowed and praysed of all men afore she was maried. 'Which is the chifest cause,' saied he, 'that the captayne desiereth in

DISCOURSE IV

honest sorte to possess you.' But touching any sinister succesee that might follow this sacred league of lawfull matrimonye—as she seamed to predestinate within her selfe—he ministred persuacions to the contrary, alledginge the same to be a superstitious follye attributed to the auncientes of olde tyme, to calculat their good or ill successe by the tunes or charme of byrdes, or somtime by the sodaine encounter of beastes, or suche men as they loked not for, arguing the same to bee such absolut signes of il lucke that commonly they wolde refraine from theyr affayres al that day. 'And touching the murmur and suspicion of the people, whose tongs although they be naturally tipte with the metal of slaunder, yet ought you as litell,' saith he, 'feare their malice, as care for their grudge; consideringe your acte is no lesse acceptable afore God, then tollerable by the positive lawes of man. Neither can they but judge well of your doinges, and like better of your choyce, seinge you are woede with great importunyties, and wone by one that is of your owne qualitie and nothinge inferior to you in vertue or noblenes of race. But if you sticke of any ceremonies which you have yet to perform to him that is deade, youre errour is greater thenne you maye justefye, and your wisedome lesse then is necessarye in suche a case: neyther is the voice of the multitude in that respecte of suche contynaunce, but tyme can take it awaye, and a wonder lasteth not for ever. And, for my parte, I hope you wil conferre my presente meaninge in this matter with the longe experienced fayth and affection whiche heretofore you have noted in me. Besides, I colde not avoyde th' imputacion of a monster and enemy to nature, if I shold not bee as carefull of your quiet as of my own life; praying you for ende, and as my laste request, to reapose your selfe whollie uppon my faythe, and frendshippe and fidelytye of him who honoreth you with no lesse then his lyfe and al that he hath.' Wherwith he so muche prevailed over his obedyent syster, that she, beinge unhappely overcom with his vehement importunyties, condissended very willingly to his unfortunat request: which after became the perentory destruction of the pore wydow, leaving to late and myserable a repentance to her brother.

DISCOURSE IV

Albeit, afore I procede to the ceremonies of her unfortunat mariage, I thoughte good to tel unto you in this place th' oppynion of mine author touchinge the dyvynacion of the spirite of man; 'who' (saythe hee) 'albeit, by a secret instincke and vertue of the mynde, is hable some times to presage that will fall, and the soule (beinge devine of itselfe) dothe also prognosticate dyversly of the future chaunces and chaunges of thinges; yet the bodye (beinge the house or harborer of the mynd) framed of the substance of claye, or a thing of more corruption, doth so prevayle and overcome the qualytyes and gyftes of the mynde, in casting a myste of darkenes afore our understandinge, that the soule is not only barred to expose the frutes of revelacion, but also it is not beleved when she prognosticates a trothe. Neyther is it in the power of man to shone or shrinke frome that whiche the foreknowledge of the highest hath already determined upon us, and much lesse to prevent or withstande the sentence of hym whose dome is as certeine as himselfe is truthe. Wherein, because I am sufficiently justefyed by th' authorities of diverse histories, as wel sacred as prophane, I will not stande here to enlarge the proofe with copy of examples, but referr you to the readinge of the sequeile of this woful ladye, who, although her fate was reveyled to her afore, yet was she denied to shone the destenye and sharppe judgement whiche the heavens were resolved to thunder uppon her.'

Touchinge dyvynacion of the mynd.

But nowe to our pourpose. Th' agrement thus made betwene the fayre Greke ladye and Don Spado, the valiant capteine, ther lacked no thing for consomacion of the mariage but th' assistance of the rites and auncient ceremonies appoynted by order of holly Churche; whiche the capteine forgat not to procure with all expedicion of tyme. And, for the more honour and decoracion of the feaste, he had ther the presence of the Marques of Mantua, beinge there, not so much for the honour of the brydegroome, as to testefye to the open face of the world the arnest affection he beare to her fyrst husbande Barzo, whom he accompted no lesse deare unto hym for credytt and truste, then the nearest frende of his blod. But nowe this Albanoys enjoyeng thus the frutes of his desier, colde not so wel brydel his present pleasure, nor

DISCOURSE IV

conceile the singuler contentment he conceived by the encounter of his new mystres, but, in publike show, began to prate of his present felicitye; arguinge the same to be of greater moment, then if he had ben frankly restored to the tytle and dygnitie of a kingdome; geving Fortune also her peculiar thankes, that had kepte this good torne in store for him, saying that she cold not have honored him with a greater preferment then to put him into the possession of her who was without a second in al Europe. But as in every thing excesse is hurtful, bringinge with it a doble discomoditie—I meane both a sourfet to the stomake by the pleasure we delite in, and a jelouse loathing of the thing we chiefly love and hold most dere—so the extreme and superfluitye of hoate love of this fonde husbande towards his wife, began, within the very month of the mariage, to converte itselfe into a contrary disposition, not much unlike the loving rage of the she ape towardes her yonge ones; who, as the poetes do affirme, doth use to chuse among her whelpes one whom she loves best, and keping it alwaies in her armes doth cherish and loll it in such rude sorte that, or she is ware, she breketh the boanes and smothereth it to death, killing by this meanes with overmuch love the thing which yet wold live if it were not for th' excesse of her affection. In like sort this Albanoyse, doating without discrecion uppon the desyer of his newe lady, and rather drowned beastely in the superfluitie of her love then waighing rightly the meryte and vertue of true affection, entred into such tearmes of fervent jelowsie, that every fle that wafteth afore her made hym sweate at the browes with the suspicion he had of her bewty. Wherin he suffered himselfe to be so much subject and overcome with the rage of this follie, that, according to the jelowse humor of th' Ytalyan, he thoughte every man that loked in her face, wente aboute to grafte hornes in his forehed. Oh! smal discrecion and lesse wisedome, in one that ought, with the shappe and forme, to merite the name and vertue of a man! What sodaine chaung and alteracion of fortune seames nowe t'assayle this valiant captein, who earst loved loyallie within the compas of raison, and now, doating without discrecion, thinketh himselfe one of the forqued ministeres of Corn-

The propertie of a she ape in embrasing her younge ons.

waile! And, albeit I must confesse unto you that the more rare and precious a thing is of itselfe, the more diligence and regarde ought we to use to preserve and kepe it in good estate; yet a wise and chast woman being one of the rarest things of the world and special gift of God, ought not to be kept in the mew, nor garded with curious and continual wach, and much lesse atended upon with the jelouse eyes of Argus: for like shee that waigheth her honor and life in indifferent ballance, not meaning to exchange the one but with the losse of the other, is not easely corrupted by any sugred traine of flattering love, so the restraint of the lyberty of womenne, together with a distruste procedinge of none occasion, is the chiefeste meane to seduce her that ells hath vowed an honeste and integrety of lyfe even untill the ende of her naturall dayes. And in vaine goeth hee aboute to make his wife honest, that eyther lockes her in his camber or fylles his house full of spyes to note her doinges, consideringe the just cause he gyves her hereby to be revenged of the distruste he hath of her without occasion; seinge with al the nature of some women is to enlarge their libertie that is abridged theim in doinge the thinge they are forbidden, more in disspyte of the distruste of their folyshe husbandes, then for any appetyt or expectacion of other contentment to themselves. Neyther hath this folyshe humor of jelowsy so much power to enter into the hart of the vertuous and wise man; who neyther wyll give his wife such cause to abuse herselfe towardes hym, nor suspect her wythout great occasyon, nor yet gyve judgement of any evill in her, withoute a sewer grounde and manifest proofe. And yet is he of suche governemente for the correction of such a falte, that he had rather cloke and disgest it with wisedome then make publication with open ponishement in the eye of the slaunderous worlde. By whiche rare patience and secret dissimulation, he dothe not onely choke the mouth of the slaunderor, buryinge the faulte with the forgetfulnes of the facte, but also reclaymes her to an assured honestie and fayth hereafter, that earst had abused him by negligence and yl fortune. But he which pennes his wife in the higest vaulte of his house, or tieth a bell at her sleve because he may heare

DISCOURSE IV

whether she goeth, or when he takes a long jorney paintes a lambe of her bellie, to know if she plaie false in his absence—these sleightes, I saye, do not only deceive him that deviseth theym, but also gives him for his travell the true title of coockeholde. In like sorte, what greater sign or argument can a man geve of his owne follie, then to beleve that to be true, which is but doutfull, and yeldinge rashelye to the resolution and sentence of his owne conceites, thinks his wife as light of the seare and apt to deceive him, as he is readie to admit synister suspicion; which procedes but of an ymperfection in hymselfe, judginge the disposition of an other, by his own complexion. Which was one of the greatest faltes in this valyante Albanoyse; who, fearing even nowe that which he nede not to dowte, began to stande in awe of his owne shadow, perswadinge himselfe that his wife was no lesse liberall of her love towards others then to him, and that the benefit of her bewtie was as common to straungers as to himselfe. Albeit, the good ladye, espyeng well enough the greefe of her husband, was not ydle, for her parte, to studie the meanes to please him, and also to frame her life in such wise every waye, that her chaste and discrete governement towardes hym mighte not only remove the vaile of his late suspicion, but also take awaye the thicke miste of frantike jelowsie that put him in suche disquiet, and made him so farre excede the lymites and bondes of discrecion. Albeit, her honeste endevor herein received a contrarye effecte; and as one borne under a crabbed constellacion, or ordeined rather to beare the malice of a froward desteinye, she colde not devise a remedie for his disease, nor any hearbe to purge his suspicious humor; but the more she sought to prefer a show of sinceritie and honestie of life, the more grew the furye and rage of his perverse fancie, thinking the compainye and fellowship of his wife to be as indifferente to others as peculiar to himselfe.

What life were like to the maried mans state, or pleasures semblable to the joyes of the bedde, if either the one or the other might be dispensed with all from the furye of frantique jellowsie? Or amongest a thousand inconveniences which

only the maried man doth fynde, what greater mischiefe maye be more for the dissolution of the mutuall tranquilitie of them bothe, then where the one loves unfaynedlie, and the other is doubtfull without cause? But the ease and quiet of men are of so small a moment, and their common pleasures so enterlarded with an ordinarye mishappe, that ther is as smal hold of the one, slippinge away with the shortnes of tyme, as undowted assurance to have the other a common gueste, and haunt us in all our doinges, not leaving us till he hath sene us laide in the pit and longe bedde of rest. Wherof I have here presented you a litle proofe in the picture and person of this selly Albanoyse; who, beginnynge as you have harde to enter into some tearmes of jellowsie wyth his wife—with whome, notwithstandynge, he had consumed certeine monethes in such pleasures as mariage doth allowe—began to grow more fervant in that furye thenne either his cause did require or wisedom ought to suffer. Wherwith, setting abroch the vessel of that poyson, forgat not for hys fyrste endevor to dogge the doinges of hys wife with secret spies in every corner, to abridge her libertie in goinge abrode, and barr the accesse of any to come to her; kepinge, notwithstandinge, no lesse watche and warde abowte her chamber thenne the good soldiour uppon his trenche, or circumspecte capteine uppon the walles of hys fortresse: whyche broughte the selly ladye into such sorow, that the state of the caytife and slave of the gallye, bounde to his ore with a chayne of unreasonable biggnes, or hee that by harde sentence of the lawe dothe lye miserablie at the bottom of a pryson all the dayes of his lyfe, seamed of more easie regarde thenne the harde condition of her presente state. Albeit, true vertue hathe suche operation and effecte of herselfe, that howe grevouslye so ever the worlde dothe persecute her, or seke to crucifye her wyth the malice of menne, yet canne they not so kepe her under by anye force they canne devise, but certeine streames and sparkes wyll burste oute nowe and thenne, and showe herselfe at laste, as shee is hable to wythstande the violence of any mortall affliction. Whereof an effecte appeares here in the sequeile of this Greke ladye; who, notinge the disposition of her husbande, overcharged wyth a mad

True vertue will alwayes yelde frutes according to the goodnes of the thing.

DISCOURSE IV

humor of wrong conceites, gave judgemente ymedyatlye of his disease, and beynge not hable utterlye to expulse his newe fever, studied by her indevor to inferr a moderacion of his passion. Wherin, for her part, she forgat not to make pacience her chiefest defence, agaynst the folish assaultes of his wilful follies; not only requitinge his extraordinary rage and fits of furie wyth a dutifull humylitye and obedience of a wife, but also ceassed not to love him no lesse then her honour and dutie bounde her therunto; hopinge, with th' assistance of some conveniente tyme, and her discrete behavior towardes hym, both to take awaye the disease, and mortifye the cause of his evill. She seamed neyther to reprehend his falte openly, nor with other tearmes thenne argued her great humilitie; and for herselfe, howe evill so ever he intreated her, she gave an outwarde showe of thankefull contentmente. And when it was his pleasure to shutt her close in a chamber, as a birde in the cage, shee refused not his sentence, but, embrasinge the gifte of her presente fortune, toke suche consolation as the harde condition of her case wolde admitt; givinge God thankes for his visitation, and cravinge with like intercession to have her husbande restored to the use of his former wittes. Albeit, all these dutifull showes of obedience, and pacient disgesting of his unnaturall discourtesies, together with a rare and redie disposition in her to frame herselfe whollie to th' appitit of his will, prevailed no more to enlarge her libertie, or redeme her from the servile yoke of close ymprisonement, then to reclayme his hagarde mynde to th' understandinge of reason, or restore the traunce of his frantique humor; raging the more (as it seamed) by the incredible constancye he noted in this mirror of modestie, obedience, wisedome, and chastetie: whose example, in theym all deserves certeinlye to be graven in pillers of eternetie, and honge upp in tables of golde, in every pallace and place of estate, to th' ende that you ladyes of oure tyme, maye learne, by ymitacion of her order and governement, to atteine to the like perfection of vertue: whiche she lefte as a speciall patterne to you all; to th' end, also, that if any of you, by like misfortune, do fal into the daunger of semblable accidentes, you may learne

here th' order of your governement, in the like affaires, and also to suppresse the rage of jelowsie, rather by vertue then force; which commonly is the foundacion of skandale and slaunder, devorcemente and violacion of mariage, wherupon doth consequently ensue civil discencions, and utter subvercion of houses of antiquitie. But nowe to the place of our historie.

This frantique Albanoyse and jelouse capteine—being one of the traine of the Lord James Trivoulse, a great favorer of the faction of Gebalyno in Italye, and at that tyme governor of the duchie of Millayne, under the Frenche Kinge Loys, the thirde of that name—whether it were to make a further proffe, of the pacience of his wife, or by absence to mortefye and forgett his fonde opinion conceived without cause, retired upon a soddaine to Newcastel, the court and ordenarie place of abode, of the sayd Lord Tryvoulse. Which, albeit was of harde disgestion, to the ladie for a time, yet, being not unaquainted with such chaunces, and no prentise in the practise of her husbande, retired to her auncient patience, and contentment by force, dyssimling with a new greefe and secrete sorowe, this newe discourtesie, to th' ende that her waspishe husbande should take no exceptions to her in any respect, but fynde her in this as the former stormes, bent wholly to obey th' appetit of his will, and not to mislike with that he fyndes necessarye to be don.

This Trivoulse hadde not spente many monethes in Fraunce, but there was commenced informacion agaynste him to the king, that he was revolted from the Frenche and become frende to the Swytzers, and sworne to their seigneurye and faction. Wherwyth, ymediatlye, Fame (the common carier of tales) filled all eares of Milan, and the province there about; with this further addicion, that the king for that cause, had sent him headles to his grave. Albeit as Fame is rather a messenger of lyes, then a treasure of truthe, and rather to be harde then beleved, so this brute, beinge not true in the laste, did ymporte a certeine credit in the fyrste; for Tryvoulse, not liking to live in the displeasure of his prince, abandoned his charg and came into Lumbardy, wher, beinge sommoned by the messenger of

Fame the common caryor of tales.

DISCOURSE IV

deathe, gave place to nature and dyed; who, beinge the onely maister and meynteynor of the Albanoyse capteine, whilest hee lived, colde not easely be forgotten of him after his death. For, after his departure was past the general doubte of the people, and eche voice resolved that he was laide in hys grave, Don Capitaino Spado, resolved whollye into teares, seamed here to pass the mistery of a newe traunce; whiche, with the freshe remembraunce of his auncient harme, and greene wounde of unworthie jelowsye, bledynge yet in his minde, broughte hym in that case, that he neyther desyred to live, nor doubted to die, and yet in dispaire of theim both. His solace of the daye was converted into teares, and the howers of the night went awaye in visions and hollowe dreames. He loathed the companye of his frendes, and hated the thynges that shoulde susteine nature. Neither was he contented with the presente, nor cared for the chaunce of future tyme. Which sodaine alteracion in straunge maner, drive his carefull wife into no lesse astonishemente then she had cause. And being ignoraunt of the occasion, she was also voide of consolation; which doubled her greefe, till tyme opened her at laste a meane to communicate familiarly wyth him in this sorte:—'Alas! syr' (sayeth she) 'to what ende serve these pininge conceites, forcinge a generall debilytie thorow al your partes? Or why do you languishe in griefe without discoverynge the cause of your sorowe to suche as holde your health no lesse deare then the sweete and pleasant taste of their owne lyfe? From whence commes this often change of complexion accompanied with a disposition of malencolicke dompes arguing your inward and fretting care of minde? Why staye you not in time the source of your skorching sighes, that have alredye drayned your bodye of his wholsome humors appointed by nature to give sucke to th' intrals and inward partes of you? And to what ende serveth this whole river of teares, flowinge by such abundance from your watery eyes almost worne awaye with weeping? Is your greefe growen great by continuance of time, or have you conceived some mislike of newe? Yf your house be out of order in any sorte, or that want of dutie or diligence in me procureth

your grudge, declare the cause, to th' ende the faulte maye be reformed in me, and you restored to your auncient order of quiet, and we both enjoye a mutuall tranquilitie as apperteineth.' But he that labored of an other disease then is incident commonly to men of good governement, absolved her of all faultes, or other mislikes he founde in the state of his house, or other his affaires committed to her order, and lesse lacke of her diligence to make declaracion of her dutie to th' utermoste. 'But alas!' saith he (with a depe sighe derived of the fretinge dolour of his minde, and doubled twise or thrise within his stomacke afore he coulde utter it) 'what cause of comfort or consolation hath he to lyve in this world, from whom the malice of destenie hath taken the chiefeste pillor of his life? Or to what ende serveth the fruicion or interest of longer yeres in this vale of unquietnes, when the bodie abhorreth alredie the longe date of his abode heare? Or why shold not this *soma*, or masse of corruption, whiche I received of the world, bee dismissed to earth, and my soule have leave to passe into the other worlde, to shonne this double passion of present torment whiche I feele by the deathe of my deare frende? Ah! my deare ladye and loyall wife, my griefe is so great, that I dye to tell you the cause, and yet the veray remembrance presents me with treble torments. Wherin, I must confess unto you, that since the death of the late Lorde Ihon Tryvulso, I have had so lytle desyer to live, that all my felicitie is in thinking to die, neyther can ther be any thinge in the world more acceptable to me then death; whose hower and time, if they were as certeine as himselfe is moste sewer to comme in the ende, I could somwhat satisfye the great desyer I have to die, and moderate the rage of my passion in thinking of the shortnes of the dome that should give ende to my dyeng ghost and unrulye sorowes together. Besides, waighing th' infinite miseries of our time, (accompanieng us even from the wombe of concepcion) with the reaste and reapose which dead men do finde, and knowing withall how muche I am in the debte of him that is dead, I can not wishe a more acceptable thinge then the spedie approche and ende of my dayes, to th' ende that, being denied the viewe of his presence here, I

Albeit death is most certeine yet the hower and time of his comming is not knowen.

DISCOURSE IV

may folow him in th'other world; where, participating indiferently such good and evil as falleth to his share, I may witnes with what duetiful zeale and affectioned harte I sought to honor and serve hym in all respects.' But the ladye, that sawe as farre into the disease of her husbande, as his phizicion into his uryne, knowynge well enoughe that he dyd not languishe so muche for the desyer of hym that was dead as the ticklishe humour of jelowsye troubled hym, was content to admit his coollours (howe fyne so ever they were) as well to preferr her dutie to th'uttermoste, as also to avoyde imputacion or cause of suspicion on her parte. Wherwith, entring into tearmes of persuacion, she added also this kynde of consolacion folowinge:—

The ladye comfortes her husbande.

'More do I greve, sir,' sayth she, 'wyth the small care you seame to take of yourselfe then the tearmes of your disease do trouble me, consideringe the same procedes of so slender occasion, that the veray remembrance of so great an oversight ought to remove the force and cause of your accident. Admit your griefe were great indeede, and your disease of no lesse importance, yet ought you so to bridle this wilful rage and desyere to dye, that, in eschewing to prevent the wyl and set hower of the Lorde, you seeke not to further your fatall ende by usynge unnaturall force against yourselfe, making your beastly will the blodye sacrifize of your bodie; whereby you shalbe sewer to leave to the remeinder of your house, a crowne of infamie in the judgement of the worlde to come, and put your soule in hazarde of grace afore the troane of justice above. You knowe, syr, I am sewer, that in this transitorye and paineful pilgrimage, there is nothinge more certeine then death, whom, albeit wee are forbidden to feare, yet oughte wee to make a certeine accompt of his comming: neyther is it any other thinge (according to the scripture) then the minister and messenger of God, executynge his infallible wil upon us wretches, sparinge neyther age, condicion, nor state. It is he that geves ende to our miserie heare, and saffe conduyte to passe into the other worlde. And assone as we have taken possession of the house of reste, he shooteth the gates of all annoye againste us, fedinge us (as it were) with a swete slomber, or

Death the messenger and minister of God.

The grave is the house of reste.

pleasant sleepe, untill the last sommonce of generall resurrection. So that, syr, methinkes they are of the happie sorte, whome the great God vouchesafeth to call to his kyngdome, exchangynge the toiles, and manifolde cares incident to the creatures of this worlde, with the pleasures of his paradise and place of reapose that never hath ende. And touchinge your devocion to him that was dead, with vaine desyer to visit his ghoste in the other worlde, persuadynge the same to procede of a debte and dutifull desyer that you have to make yet a further declaracion of your unfained minde towardes him, I assure you, (syr) I am more sorye to see you subject to so great a follie then I feare or expect the effecte of your dreame, for as it seames but a ridle, procedinge of the vehemencie of your sicknes, so I hope you will directe the sequeile by sage advise, convertinge the circumstance into ayre, without further remembrance of so foolish a matter. Wherin also I hope you wyll suffer the wordes of the scripture to direct you; who, allowinge small ceremonies to the dead, forbides us to yelde any debte or dutie at all to suche as be alredie passed out of the worlde, and muche lesse to sacrifyze ourselves for their sakes upon their tombes (accordynge to the supersticious order of the barbarians in olde time, remeinyng at this daye in no lesse use amonge the people of the weste worlde) but rather to have their vertues in due veneracion, and, treadynge in the steppes of their examples, to imytate theyr order with like integretye of lyfe. And for my parte' (saith she) dyenge her garmentes with the droppes of her waterye eyes, 'provynge to late what it is to loase a husbande, and to forgett hym whome bothe the lawe of God and nature hathe gyven me as a seconde parte of myselfe, to lyve wyth mutuall contentement untyll the dissolucion of oure sacred bonde by the heavye hande of God, am thus farre resolved in my selfe, protestynge to performe no lesse by Hym that lyveth, that yf the furye of your passion prevaile above your resistaunce, or your disease growe to suche extreame tearmes that wyll not be otherwayes aunswered but that you muste yelde to hys sommonce and dye, I wyl not lyve to lament the losse of my second husbande, nor use other dule in the funerall

A ceremonie amongest the barbarians to sacrafise themselves uppon the tombes of their deade frendes.

DISCOURSE IV

of youre corps, then to accompanye it to the grave in a sheete or shroode of like attire. For youre eyes shall no sooner cloase their liddes, or loase the lyght of this worlde, then theis handes shalbe readye to performe the effecte of my promisse; and the bell that gyveth warnyng of your last hower, shall not ceasse his doleful knil, til he have published with like sound the semblable ende of your deare and lovynge wyfe.'—Whose simple and franke offer here (openynge a most convenient occasion for her wylfull husbande to disclose the true cause of hys disease) prevailed so muche over his doubtefull and waverynge mynde, that, dismissing even then his former dissimulacion, he embraced her, not without suche abundance of teares and unruly sighes, that for the tyme they tooke awaie the use of his tounge. Albeit, beinge delivered of his traunce, and restored to the benefit of his speche, he disclosed unto her the true cause and circumstaunce of his greefe in this sorte:—

'Albeit, since the time of my sicknes' (saith he) 'you have seene what distresse and desolation have passed me, wyth fyttes of straunge and diverse disposition, merveilynge no lesse (I am sewer) from what fountaine have flowed the *symptomes* of so rare a passion, wherein also your continuall presence and viewe of my weake state is sufficientlye hable to recorde the whole discourse of my disease, yet are you neyther partaker of my payne, nor privye to the principall causes of so straunge an evill. Neyther have I bene so hardie to discover theim unto you, because I have ben hetherto doubtful of that whereof your laste wordes have fullye absolved me. And nowe, being weakened with the wearines of tyme and sicknes, in suche sorte as nature hath ridd her handes of me and gyven me over to the order of death—who is to spare me no longer but to utter these laste wordes unto you—I accompte it a special felicitie in my harde fortune, that, in th'oppenynge of the true causes of my grefe, I may cloase and seale up the laste and extreame tearme of my lyfe. And, because I wil cleare in few wordes the misterie which seames to amaze you, you shall note that there be iii onely ministers and occasyons of my disease; whereof the firste (and of leaste importance) is for the death

of my late lorde and maister, Don Ihon Tryvoulso, whereof you are not ignorant; the second (excedinge the firste in greatnes of grefe and force againste me) is to thinke that the rigour of my destinies, and violence of sicknes, yeldynge me into the handes of death, will dissolve and breake by that meanes, the league of longe and loyall love whiche from the beginnynge my harte hath vowed unto you; but the thirde and laste (of a more strange qualitie then eyther of the reste) is to thinke that when I am dead, and by time worne out of your minde, another shal enjoye the sweete and pleasaunt benefit of that devine beautie of yours, whiche oughte to serve but for the dyet of the gods, the simple viewe whereof seames hable (yf it were possible) to make me suffer the martiredome of ii deaths.' Whereunto she replied with persuacions to drive hym from his fonde devise, profering herselfe eftesones to dye for companye wherin (callynge the majestie of the Highest to witnes) she protested againe that, if he wolde not be reclaimed from his desyer to dye within a veray shorte moment of tyme, she woulde bee as redye to yelde death his tribute as he. All whiche she inferred (I thinke) rather to feede the tyme, then of intent to performe the effecte of her offer, havinge the lyke opynion of her husbande, whome she thoughte alwayes to have suche power to represse the evill sprite that possessed hym, that he woulde not become the unnaturall morderer of hymselfe, and muche lesse execute the lyke rage on her. But alas! the infortunat ladye brewed heare the brothe of her owne bane, and spon the thredd of her owne destruction, for fallynge nowe unhappelye into the malice of her destenie, thinkyng nothinge lesse then of the secret ambushe of mortall treason her husband had layed for her, went unhappelye to bed wyth hym the same nighte; where, for his parte (preferinge in his face a shew of fayned contentement and consolation to the eye) he forced a further quiete of mynde by the joye he ymagined in the acte he ment to do, but chieflye for that he had devised howe th' innocent ladye (throughe the rage of his villainy) sholde bee forced to an effecte of her promisse. For the spedie execution wherof, they had not bene longe in bedd together, but he rise from her, faynynge

The captaine riseth to fetche his dagger to kyll his wyfe.

DISCOURSE IV

a desier to performe the necessitie of nature in the closset or chamber of secretes; his erraund in dede being to fetche his dagger, which (without makyng her privye) he conveyed under the bolster of his bed, beginnynge even then to preferre a preamble afore the parte he ment to playe. For, fallinge from his former complaintes of sicknes, he retired into tearmes of extreme frenezy and madnes, brainge out such groanes and sighes of hideus disposicion, with owlynge, cryeng, and foaminge at the mouth, like one possessed with an evill sprit, that who had seene his often change of coollor and complexion in his face, his ghastly regardes arguinge ententes of desperacion, and his eyes (flaming with furye) sonke into his head, with the order of his passion every waye, mighte easely have judged the desyer of his harte to be of no smal importance, and the thynge he went about neither common nor commendable. Wherein he was assisted with iii enemies of diverse disposicions, love, jealousie, and death: the least of the whiche is sufficient of himselfe to make a man chafe in his harneys, and take away the courage of his hart in the middest of the combat. For the one presented a certaine feare by reason of the horrour of the acte; the other sewed (as it were) for an abstinence, or at least a moderacion, of the crueltie he had commenced against his innocent wif; but the third, being the beginner of al, and excedinge the rest in power, wolde not dismisse him from the stage till he had playd th' uttermost acte of his malicious tragedie.

Marke here (good ladyes) the desolation of this unfortunat gentlewoman, and dispose yourselves to teares on the behalfe of hir distresse. Wherin, certeinlye, you have no lesse reason to helpe to bewaile her wretched chaunce, then juste occasion to joyne in generall exclamation againste the detestable acte of her tyrannous husband; who, disclayminge even nowe his former state and condition of a man, retires into th' abite of a monster, and cruell enemye to nature; and in convertinge the vertue of his former love, and remembrance of the sondrie pleasures he had heretofore receyved of his deare and lovynge wyfe, into present rage and unnaturall furye (far excedinge the savage and brutishe maner of the tiger,

lyon, or libarde, bredd in the desertes of Affrike, the common norsse of monsters and creatures cruell without reason) whettyng his teeth for the terrible suggestion of the devill, who at th'instante put into his hande the dagger; wherewith, after he had embraced and kissed her, in such sorte as Judas kissed our Lorde the same night he betraied him, he saluted her with ten or xii estockados, one in the necke of another in diverse partes of her bodye, renewynge the conflict with no lesse nomber of blowes in her head and armes; and because no parte shoulde escape free from the stroke of his malice, he visyted her white and tender legges, with no lesse rage and furye then the rest. Wherewith, beholdinge in her diverse undoubted argumentes of death, began the lyke warre wyth hymselfe, usinge the same meane and ministers with his owne handes, enbrewed yet with the bloode of his innocent wyfe; shewyng (notwithstandyng this horrible part and acte of dispaire) diverse and sondrye signes of speciall gladnes and pleasure in his face, wherin he contynued till the laste and extreame gaspe of lyfe—chieflie for that he sawe him accompanied to death with her whome he was not hable to leave behinde hym on lyve, and who, beinge overcharged (as you have harde) with the nomber of woundes, the violence whereof (prevailinge farre above the resistance of lyfe) did presse her so muche with the hastie approche of death, that the want of breath abridged her secret shryft and confession to God, with lesse leasure to yeld her innocent soule (wyth humble praier) into the handes of her Redemer, and commende the forgevenes of her synnes to the benefit of his mercie. Only she had respyte (with great ado to speake) to give order that her bodie mighte be layde in the tombe of her firste husbande, Signeur Barzo. But the cursed and execrable Albanoys (so whollie possessed with the devill that the gyfte of grace was denied him) abhorred to the laste mynute of his lyfe the remembrance of repentance; for, laughinge (as it were) at the fowlenes of the facte even untill life left him senceles and voyde of breathe, he commended his carkes to the gredie jawes of ravenous wolves, serving also as a fyt praie for the venemous serpentes and other crepinge wormes of the earthe,

Here he killeth his wyf.

DISCOURSE IV

and his soule to the reprobate socyetie of Judas and Cayne, with other of th'infernall crewe.

The worthie ende of this wicked wretche argueth the juste rewarde of the evill disposed and suche as are unhappelie dropped out of the favor of God, the ordenarye successe of those enterprises that are begon without the consente of wisedom or raison, but chiefly th'effectes and fortune of such as (blinded with the vaile of their owne wil and dymned with the myste of follye) do reapose so muche for theim selves in the opinion of their owne witte, that, detestinge good councell and advise of the wise, doo credit onlye the conceite of their owne fancie, whiche (as a blinde guide) doth leade them into infynit miseries and laborinth of endles annoye, where there is no dispense of their follie, but losse of libertie, perpetual infamie, and sometime punishemente by untimely deathe. Whyche, as they bee worthie rewardes for suche as doat so much in their owne wisedome that they accompte the same hable of it selfe to comprehend the whole globe, or compasse the worlde; so the wise man, affore he entreth into any enterprise of waight (beinge carefull for the conveyghe of the same) dothe not onlye compare the ende wyth the beginning, and cast the sequiel and circumstance everye waye, but also, entringe (as it were) into hymselfe, hee makes a view of that which is in hym; and for his better assistance, he will not refuce the advise of his frends, by whiche meanes he is sewer to reape the rewarde of his traveil with treble contentmente, and seldom is he punished with to late a repentance. Herewith, also, th'example of the wise maryner doth in like sorte advise us; who, comming by fortune or violence of wether upon an unknowen coaste, doth straightway sounde and trye the depth of the river by his plommet and lyne, neyther will he let fall his anker onlesse he be sewer of the fyrmenes of the grounde; whiche, if it do faile him, yet is hee to wythstande the malice of daunger by kepinge the chanell whiche yeldes hym water enoughe: so if this wretched Albanoys hadde made a view of himselfe and his forces, afore he became subject to the humor of jalouse suspicion, or if he had given correction to his falte in tyme, and suffred reason

A comparison derived of the pollicie whiche the wise mariner or shipmaister doth use.

to suppresse the rage of his follie afore he was growen to tearmes of madnes, he had enjoyed his ladie at pleasure, lyved yet in quiet, and prevented the fowle note of infamie wherewith the gates and posternes of his house wil be painted, till th' extreme date of the world; and eschewed the peril of dampnable dispair in killing himselfe, with like violacion and bloddie slaughter of his innocent lady. Whose death, with the straungenes in execution, being once knowen to the multitude, it is to be wondered what generall dule and desolation were in all partes of the citie, how al estates and degres of people spared no sortes of teares nor other dollerous tunes; bewailinge her misfortune, with several grudges at the malice of her destinies, that, in such cruel maner, toke from amongest them the person of her whose vertues and other ornamentes of God and nature served as a special mirror or lokinge glasse to al ages. Wherin, certeinlie, they had great reason; for a lady or gentlewoman equal with her in conversacion everye way—I meane chast without argument of dishonestie, devowt and yet hatinge supersticion, bowntiful without wasteful prodigalitie, wise without vaine vaunting, so obediente towardes her husbande as was necessarie, and lastlie lackinge the furniture of no good vertue—can not be to much honored in her life, nor worthely renoumed after her death; as wel for that such rare gifts are no lesse meritorious for the vertues that be in theim, then that they serve as special allurementes to provoke younge ladies and gentlewomen (desyrous of like glorye) to ymytat th' example and vertues of them whose due fame is hable to excede the length of time and lyve after deathe; who hathe no power but over our corrupte *soma*, or masse of fleshe, beinge barred to medle wyth the felicitie of the mynde, to whome only the title of perpetuitie is due wythout exception. And as her life and deathe ymporte severall vertues, and deserve semblable commendacion (the one for that shee never made showe of mislike, what wronge so ever hee wroughte her; the other in that shee failed not to honor him til the laste hower of his life) so may you also descerne therein ii severall exaumples: the one to warne the lighte and harebrained husbandes not

Giftes which ought to appeare in an honest woman.

Death hath no power but over our bodye.

easelie, or for smal occasions, to enter into suspicion with their wyves; whom they ought to love and honoure no lesse thenne theimselves; the other to presente unto the ladyes of oure tyme the due rewarde of wysedome, obedience, and chastetie, which be the thinges that make this Greeke lyve after her deathe, beinge worthelye invested wythe the wreathes of honoure amonge all the ladies of that contreye.

# DISCOURSE
# V

SONDRYE PERILLS, happeninge to a yonge Gentleman of Myllan in the poursewte of his Ladye.

## DISCOURSE V

### THE ARGUMENT

Because I have already in diverse places sufficientlye deciphered the forces of love, and what effectes he exposeth having once brued the cuppe of the pleasant poison of our sensual appetyt —whereon whosoever syppeth, swaloweth justelye the rewarde of such follies—I may the rather be dispensed wythall eftsones to reitterate in this place that whiche earste hathe bene inferred touchinge the awe whiche that passion hathe over the hartes of those whose destenie yeldes theim subjecte to so greate an evill. Beinge bolde withall to note as a principle or rule of generalitie, that that infection procedes rather of the corrupcion of our owne nature then of the perfection of the same. Albeit some vaine philosophers are not ashamed to advowche his beginning of the moste perfect partes that are in the spirite of man; wherin I see neyther authoritie to allowe their saing, nor reason to confirme their opinion, onles they will make it meritorious for th' indiscretion and follies whiche appeare in theim that participat with such passion. For a familiar testymonie wherof I have preferred this historie folowing, not only affirminge my former protestacion touchinge the disordinat effectes of love, but also to justefye the opynion of him who makes no difference betwene the devise of love and raginge fyttes of frenezy or one posseste with a wicked spirite. For here you maye see a gentleman of Myllan (to enjoy a presence and pleasure of his lady) refuseth not to commit himselfe to manifold daungers, with diverse perillous encounters; whereof the one seamed no lesse mortal then the other, and everye one threatening the end of his life by present morder. Albeit his felicitie defended him from harme, and the perill passed makes him dread a future plunge.

Love procedes of the corrupcion of our owne nature.

# TRAGICALL DISCOURSES

NOT longe after Maxymilian's force, by the guide of evill fortune, and wante of good governmente in himselfe, hadde lost the state and seigneurye of Millan, there happened no lesse desolation to the unhappie faction of the Gebelyns; when the power and pollecie of the great Trivolso did not only abandon their naturall soyle and place of abode, dryvinge theym from the possession of their worldlye porcions, but also persecuted their wretched state with suche creweltie, that they were readie to yelde to the somonce of dispare, if it had not bene for a simple proffer of a certeine hope they reaposed in th' assistance of th' emprour Maximilian; who, more willing then hable to restore their desolation, pursewed the revenge of their wronge wyth a puissant armye even untill the walls and gates of Millan; where he receyved suche hoat repulses by the valyaunte encounters of Charles, Duke of Burbon (thenne viceroye or deputie to the Frenche kynge) that, paintynge the gates wyth the blod of hys capteines, and leaving the deade bodyes of hys people in witnes of his beyng there, the majestie retorned wythe more commendacion for hys good meanynge thenne fame or glorye of the victorie, leavyng the miserable stradyates (bathed in the teares of their seconde sorowe) to the guide and governemente of their Fortune; who seamed at laste to enter into suche compassion of their miserie, that shee restored the greateste parte not only to the libertie of their contrey and societie of former habytacion, but also to th' use of their goodes and revenues usurped by the enemie. The rest shee devided into diverse corners of Christendom. Som went to Trent, and were sworne the subjectes of Francis Sforce, Duke of Bary: other founde place of abode in the kingdom of Naples. To some she gave passeporte to attempte the devocion of the wholly vicar of Rome; and the rest repaired to Mantua. Amongest whiche crewe or laste company was one Cornelio (upon whom this

DISCOURSE V

historie maketh his chiefest discourse), whom, albeit Fortune had made partaker of her malice amongest the reste of his contreymen, yet hys mynde, grudging with th'injurye of fate, loste nothing of her entyer and vertue. For notwithstandinge hee was of the race of the Sforcians, and chiefest enemeye to the usurped governement and prowde behavior of the Frenchemen wythin Millan, and that hee had lefte amongeste theim his inheritance and goodes to confiscacion, yet was he assisted wyth so fyne a polecye and great indevor of his mother, that he had sufficient exhibicion to meinteyne his auncient porte and callinge.

And as the statelie viewe and feyture of his complexion and lyms, presented a speciall conninge of nature, lackynge besides no gyfte or qualitie due to a gentleman, and pestered, wythall, wyth no more yeres then were conveniente for the decoracion of so seamly a bewtie; so, being the chiefe courtier that hawnted the companie of ladyes, and no lesse welcome amongest the loftie dames of Millan afore the subvercion of their societie by the crueltie of the Frenchemen, hee made a choise of one from amongeste the reste, whom he failed not to court wyth a contynual proffer of his service, and other offices of humanitie prescrybed in the skole of love, untill he thought himselfe sufficientlye rampierd in the intralls of her hart, and left her no lesse willinge to yelde a perticipacion of affection then himselfe passioned wyth desyer to pursewe the quest and conquere her bewtie. Her name was Plaudina, equall to him in the height of estate, and nothing inferior in the golden giftes and ornamentes of nature. And albeit she had newlie made a proofe of the maried man's pastyme, and offred the flower and first frutes of her virginitie upon th'alter of wedlocke; yet the youngnes of her yeres (defending her bewtie from al argumentes of alteracion or chaunge) wolde not suffer the hoat and often encounters of her husbande, to ympare any waye the glasse or precious dye of so rare a perfection. Wherein as she was noted the odd peragon of Italy, as wel for that respecte as other ornamentes of majestie incydente to honor, so the commendacion of these vertues seamed not so fyt an instrument to advance her fame and glorye, as presente meanes to procure treble

passion to the new disquiet of Cornelio; who greved not so muche wyth the sentence of adversitie, as cryed out of the lawe of nature and malice of his presente fortune: for that the one had geven hym a harte to love, and libertie to chuse, and the other, being his guide in the toile and travell of his sute, toke hym awaye when hee attended to reape the frutes of his harveste. But that whiche broughte more oyle to his matche, and kindled the coales of freshe disquiett, was that, albeit he knewe himselfe to be reciprocallie loved, or at leaste nere the good wyll of his ladye, yet was he voyde of meanes and mynisters to solicite hys cause, or bewraie that whyche hee durste not discover other thenne th' amarous regardes and glaunces of the eye, wyth certeine sighes and secret wringing of the hande, and kisses gotten by stealthe in corners. Whiche albeit argued a likelihod and *simpathya* of affection, ympartinge an equalitie of desyer to the hartes of theim both, yet the one being afraied to geve the charge, and the other ashamed to resigne without an alaram, seamed both plonged indifferentlye in a passion of doubt and feare, untill love (whose affaires can not well bee dispatched without th' assistance of a thirde) quarellinge with the simplicitye of Cornelio, presented him with a messenger conveniente for the conveighe of their buysines. For there was a pore swaine, sometime serving as a drudge to the mother of Cornelio, and nowe preferred to his ladye Plaudina in the rowmthe of her wagyner or coache dryver, whose office as it was alwayes to go by the doare of her coache when her pleasure was to visyt places of solace and take open ayre in the feldes, so reaposinge muche for himselfe in the fidelitie of his slave (thinking to enjoyne a greater credit to th' authorytie of his small office) admitted him in his hart the aptest collcarier betwene hym and his ladye. Wherfore, after he had conjured him by feare and faire promisses to advowe his diligence to th' uttermoste, wyth no lesse secrecye then wisedom, and convenient expedicion at al tymes, he made a firste proofe of his pollecie and fyne conveighe of his charge, in the delyverye of a letter whiche he willed him to presente unto Plaudina; th' inward affection and disposition of whose hart, as hee measured by the messages of her eyes, so he

Secret solicitors of the inward affection of the harte.

DISCOURSE V

Cornelio writeth to Plaudyna.

preferred his service and boarded her good wil with these tearmes:—'If it were not, good madam, that everye state and condicion of man were subject to his peculyar desaster, and that the noble hart (made of a delicat mettal) is more full of affections, and apte to enclyne to the loare of love, then the reste of the rude and barbarous people, I woulde thinke that the passion whiche pinchethe suche as do love, were a skourge and due correction sente from above, for a chastismente of their loftye and wanton ymagynacions. But seinge it is moste sewer that nature hath put a certeine difference betwene the dispositions of her creatures, wyth a desier to pursewe the sommonce of her instigacion accordinge to the priviledge of their degree, it is not in our power to disclaime th' instructions of such a guide, nor degenerat from th' instinct of that destenie geven us in oure conception. Wherin, as the noble mynde, loathinge the enterpryse of base or vile condicion, delites in suche conquestes as yelde moste fame or commendacion, so you oughte not to mervaile if the glymeringe beames of your rare bewtie, paynted by devine arte in the forefronte of your face, the adoracion wyche all men yelde to youre singler vertues, wyth other semely perfections and gyftes of majestie gyven you by the heavens for a dowry above the rest, have made me strike saile of my former lybertie, wyth franke resignacion of my harte and dearest parte in me to the disposicion of your mercye. Neyther have I any cause at all to mislike the sentence of my fate, or grudge wyth the lot of my present choice, yf the respecte of my unfained love and sincere loyaltye maye move you to paye the tribute of my service with an assuraunce of semblable affection. Wherein, because both daunger and distance of our abodes, denienge the tongue to do his office, barreth us also to use the benefytt of mutuall conference, I humbly crave (good madam) an absolute resolution, by our letters, of that which the secret signes and messengers of love, do not only put me in hope, but importes a warrantie of the conquest of your good wyll. Wherein, yf I maye be assisted with the goodnes of the heavens, and consent of Fortune, so farfurth as the same maye make me meritorious of your favour, and that the

The eyes be the secret signes and mesengers of love.

meritt of my service maye bee measured with a graunte of your good wil, there shall no peril withstande the proffer of my lyfe to do you pleasure, nor any occasion or chaunce, whether it be accidental or proper, have power to breake the vowe which my harte hath alredie sworne to dye and lyve in the service and contemplacion of youre beautie. Neyther shall any ladye in this corner of the world have more cause to joye in the choice of her servant then the peragon Plaudina; whose hande I kysse with greate humilitye, and honour the remembrance of her name with no lesse sinceritie, being absent, then desyerous to yelde my homage with due adoracion to the presence of so faire a creature.—Yours, more then his owne, CORNELYO.' 

The ladye being darted afore with the desyer of Cornelio (and wold gladly have entred the listes and gyven the onset, if it had not bene for the respect of her honour) was nowe so wounded to the quicke, that she fel into tearmes of commendacion of her chaunce, blissynge the goodnes of her fortune, that had not onely planted her affection in so highe a place, but (yeldynge her rewarde wyth semblable glee) hath made her the mystres of hym whom her hart had alredye chosen and admitted into undoubted favor, whiche she confirmed eftesones with such tearmes of gratulation and arguments of present gladnes, that, yf the remorce of shame and reputacion of her honor hadde not bene impedimentes to the desyer of her harte, cloasinge her mouth againste the present conceytes of joye in this newe societie, she had immediatlye dismissed the messenger with absolute assurance to performe the request of him that sent hym. Wherof, albeit shame seamed to abridge the expedicion, and offer causes of staye for the time, yet, wantynge force to mortifye altogether the humour of ragyng desyer, she was driven to gyve place to the provocation of love, who devestinge her of honest shamfastnes, whiche oughte to be the chiefe habite and decoracion of the beautie of greate ladyes, willed her to deferre no lenger the thynge she had alredye vowed; and seynge the injurie of present tyme denied her to satisfye hym as she woulde, at leaste to yelde hym suche contente-

DISCOURSE V

ment as she maye. Wherfore takynge pen, ynke, and paper, she replied to his letter wyth this aunswere:—

Plaudyna aunswereth the letter of her servant.

'The circumstaunce of your present letter (syr) seames to argue an excepcion against the frendly lookes and glaunces of mine eyes. Wherin, albeit I coulde note a greate simplicitie and want of discrecion in him that constreth the regardes of a ladye (cast at unwares) to the commoditye of hymselfe, in wynninge the good will of her that meaneth nothing lesse then to make them the ministers of love, yet, beinge more ready to content you therin then curious of mine owne behaviour, I am to acquite you of imputacion that waye, and convert the note of that follie to the oversight of myselfe. And, albeit the pleasant encounter of mine eys, seaming more liberal on your behalf, with a familiaritie more then ordinarie to al men, may persuade a certein difference I have put betwen the frendship of you and respect of any other, with desyer to embrace you above any one creature; yet was I of opinion that your sondrye vertues and reputation of honor, would not suffer you to chalenge me for the firste faulte, or to converte theis regardes of simple and colde favor into suche consequence, as to attempte the violation of that which mine honor grudgeth to lose, and the vowe of faith to my husbande forbiddes to depart withall. Notwithstanding, I yelde you no lesse thankes for your curtesye then you seame to gyve commendacion to my beautie and other gyftes you note in me, accomptinge the same of greater price, by the value and estimacion you make of them. Neither wil I refuse the proffer of your present frendship, which (as I hope) is voyde of intent to prejudice mine honor. So let it suffise you that I am not only contented to admit you into favor, but also determined to hold you no lesse deare then the tendrest part of myselfe. And because letters (beinge incident to manye casualties) are commonly the fyrst discloasers of the secretes of lovers, my advise is that hensfurth you staye not only the diligence of your pen in sealing such great importance within a dissemblyng pece of paper, but also be contented to commit the whole conveighe of our busines to the credit of this bringer; who is to yelde you

salutacion on the behalf of her, who, joyeng no lesse in the unitye of this frendship, then hating the thing that maie seame hurteful to the consommacion of the same, doth wishe your constancie of no longer continuance then you shal fynde cause of credit in the loyaltie of your unfayned

'PLAUDINA.'

The report of this letter preferred such a possibilitie and likelihode of good lucke to the Myllanoys, that, dismissing even now al arguments of former doubte, he determined to accepte the offer of his fortune and pursue the benefit of present time. Wherin he was so furthered by the diligence of the minister and messenger of their love, that theare seamed to want (for the fynall complote of theyr buysynes) but only the consent of convenient tyme and place: which had folowed accordingly, yf, for the more assurance of the bargaine, they had brybed the good wyll of the blinde goddesse; whom, as the poetes have christened by the name of Dame Fortune, gyvinge her charge over the change and alteracion of things, so she is not so inconstant of herselfe, as readye to manifest her mutabilitie when the wretches of the worlde seame to reapose moste assurance in her frendship. And as the pleasant apple, mustering with delicate glee upon the heyght of the highest spraise, is blowen down with the leaste poffe of winde that breathes, and so oppressed wyth the violence of the fal, that the frute is quyte taken awaye in the middest of his glorye; so the ease and quiet of man is favored wyth so small a moment of time, and subject to so manye chaunges, that we oughte neyther esteme (so greatlye as we do) the tikle pleasures of so small abode, nor judge assurance in suche uncerteine vanities. Seing, withal, the same is of suche malicious disposicion, that when we have laied the fundation of oure pleasure and prosperitie, with full persuacion to enjoye oure quiet without controllement, it is then that Fortune discovereth her ambushe, and invadynge us, at unwares, wyth the furye of her malice, paieth our former pleasure wyth an interest of treble desolacion, that fayleth not to attende us even untill our fatall daye of reapose. Wherof you maye note a familyar proffe in the

Fortune a blind goddes.

DISCOURSE V

sequeile of this Cornelio, who, beinge uppon the point to taste of the delicat frutes in love, and embrace hys ladye with suche contentement as lovers do commonlye wishe and seldome encounter, beholde! the malice of the Frenchemen began to rage wyth suche extremitie againste the lynage of the Sforcians (whereof he was one of the chiefest) that he was dryven to avoyde the present daunger of hys lyfe, wyth a soddaine fleight and secrete stealynge oute of the towne. Wherin he was so hoatlye pursued with th'extremitye of his perill, that beyng barred anye leasure to communicate wyth hys dearest frends, and lesse time to impart his mishap to his lady, or once salute her with a simple farewell: which seamed not so grevous to himselfe, as of treble dolour to the sorowfull Plaudina; who, distillynge no small nomber of teares on the behalfe of the soddain departure and absence of her deare frende, and restored at laste to a moderation and patience by force, began to cast the circumstaunce of his daunger. Wherin she ymagined all suche doubtes as eyther hope or feare coulde put in her head; somtime persuadynge he should be overtaken and oppressed by the waye, and by and by she feared leaste he were betrayed into the handes of his enemies, by the malice of such as he put in truste with his life. Wherin she was no lesse doubtefull of the one, then in dispaire of th'other, and in such perplexitie with the conceite of them both, that she seamed no lesse passioned for the time then if the enemies of her frende had cut her Cornelio in peces afore her face. And as she wolde have dismissed theis tragicall conceites of doubte and feare, and retired to a quiet, wyth expectation of better fortune, she was sodainly assailed with a seconde alarame in her hart, which mortifyenge all care of the well doinge of her absent Cornelio, preferred a vehement desyer not onely to recover hym (wherin appeared a greate impossibilitye) but also, wishinge to bee a companyon of his jorney, and partaker of his miserye, she seamed to expose a franke offer of that whiche earste she was ashamed and made conscience to graunt. And as she was voyd of al comfort in this calamitye, savinge that the often remembrance of her frende, seamed to restore some litle contentement; so, ymaginynge

The use of her bodye.

that the breath of the ayre wolde cary the *Eccho* of her complaintes into the eares of hym that was gon, she saluted his absence with theis tearmes:—

Plaudina lamenteth the absence of her frend with complaint againste her owne misfortune.

'All thinges ought to be hatefull to the eares which seame hurteful to the quiet of the mynde; and yet one chiefe consolation wee fynde in miserye is to recorde the circumstaunce of our misfortune; neither can that grief be of greate importance, whose cause is of small moment. But alas! what sorow is semblable to the separacion of frendes? Ah! Cornelio, what auncient grudge procureth this newe mislike, or what offence have I don of late, that makes me meritorious of this greate discurtesye? Wyl thou paye the merite of my frendshypp wyth so unthankefull a trybute, and abuse th'expectacion whiche all man had of thy vertue? Haste thou plyed me to th'appetit of thy wyll, and nowe determined to leave me in the greatest distresse of desyer to enjoye thee? Or canst thow use so small regarde to the desolate state of thy sorowfull Plaudina, as, leavynge her bathed in the teares of underserved dule, to steale awaye, wyth oute the comfort of one simple adieu? What nedest thou have doubted to communicate wyth her who hath alwayes reserved an equall care of thy savetye and her owne lyfe? And yf the love thou haste vaunted to bere me, had bene matched wyth an unfained meanynge of continuance and constancie, the feare of the enemy had not prevented thy comminge to me: for love alas! defyeth the malice of daunger, and perill is the thynge that leaste troubleth the harte that is trulye affectionate. What comfort in my present miserie, or expectation of future redresse, beinge out of hope eftesones to reclaime hym that receyved but nowe the sentence of continuall exile? How am I plunged in a passion of double extremetie; neyther content to disclaime my affection, and lesse hable to dismisse the remembrance of hym that is the cause of my wo! I fynde nowe (alas! to soone) howe justelye we women maye exclayme againste nature; who, framynge us of a brickle moulde, apte to yelde and easye to be wonne, hath enjoyned us withall a certeine vehemencie of affection, pearsynge the harte wyth desyer, in suche sorte as, being once thorowlye coyffed wyth love, we

Love estemeth no daunger.

DISCOURSE V

are not onelye forsaken, when we wishe chieflye to embrace the object of oure appetit, but also are subject to abyde all sortes of revenge of the ordinarye rigour of men. And what rigour or wronge have I offred the, oh! Cornelio, wherof I have not felte the firste apprehencion? For, forcyng my selfe to yelde the contentement, I spared not the proffer of myne honour to purchasse thy frendshipp, and in gyvinge the assuraunce of my good wyll, I have spotted the renowme of my former reputacion. Whereof, the bloode of shame puttes me in remembraunce wyth grudge at so greate a faulte; and thy conscience is my present witnes of my unfayned loyaltye. Neyther wyll the flatterynge lynes of thy sondrye letters conceile this discurtesye, nor the messenger and faythfull solicitour of oure love forgette to reproche the of unconstant behavyour to thy loyall Plaudina; who, feelynge now what it is to lacke the societye of hym, whome the harte hath chosen to love, is equallie pinched wyth the panges of suche as, plunged in the passion of desyer, do wishe that they wante, and lacke the thynge they chieflye woulde have; whereby they seame to norishe lyfe wyth the onely breath of a simple and colde hope. But why am I so pertiall on myne owne behalfe, in disclaimynge againste the discurtesye of hym, who peradventure deserveth not theis tearmes of blame? Or why doe I not rather respect the true cause of his departure, sturred up (as it seameth) by the necessitye of the tyme, forcinge hym to habandon his parentes, contreye and revenue, onles he wolde quenche the thirste of his enemyes wyth the abundance of his blood, and appease theyr malyce wyth the price of his heade? Certeinlye the vertues and gyftes of Cornelio acquite hym of all argumentes of inconstancie: neyther can a bodye of so rare perfection harbor suche dyssemblynge disposicion. But as the desyerous harte is seldome at rest, so the doubtfull mynde is dreadefull of deceite, and, quarellynge continuallye with his good hap or synister fortune, is alwayes in ymaginacion what judgement to resolve uppon the condition of his owne estate. So my case is of no lesse perplexitie; for, wafting indifferently betwene happie chaunce, and evil successe, I fele myselfe double passioned, somtime moved to rejoice my good hap,

The desyerous harte is seldom at rest, and doubtefull mindes dreede alwayes deceite.

in being loved of so honest, curteous, and noble, a gentleman as Cornelio, and by and by dryven to inveighe againste my evill fortune, that hath put suche distance and seperacion of oure bodies when we weare at point to performe the consommacion of our acquaintaunce. And, albeit the common chaunces of this worlde resemble a confection made of hony and gall, and that the banquettes of love beinge garnished with dishes of both sortes, will us to make choice wyth deliberacion—alledgynge that the pleasure is not so great, as the repentaunce and penaunce of harde disgestion—yet I thinke the vertue to performe the vowe of the harte takes awaye the greatnes and haynous disposicion of the faulte. Wherefore seinge my hart hath made his choice, and the reste of my partes resolved to performe the quest, I wyll not onelye dismisse all doubtes of the assurance of his good wyll, but studye to excede hym in affection; devisinge the meanes from hensfurth, to make hym feele the force of my goodwill, with the desyer I have to knitt an indissoluble unitye of the ij mindes, whose bodies are forced to lyve in seperation by the malice of the worlde, and angrie dome of my fortune.'

Here, yf Plaudina inveighed onely upon ij pointes of her desaster, the one for the soddaine departure of her frende, and the other for the doubte she seamed to put in the assuraunce of his love, it is to bee thoughte that Cornelio had cause of treble complaint, both to be driven to save his lyfe by cowardlye flighte, to steale awaye in suche secret and scilent maner, as only his guide was pryvie to his goinge, and also to bee distressed with such shortnes of time, that he was barred to seame thankeful to his ladye with a simple farewel, whiche was sufficient to sturre up her jelous humour againste hym. But that whiche exceded the rest in greatnes of greef was that he had no man of trust to carye her newes of his being, and muche lesse durste he communicat his buysynes wyth any straunger. Neyther had he hope to be advertised of the accurrantes of Myllan, nor meane to make reaport of his owne estate at Mantua; for that he durst not discover the place of his present abode there. Wherefore cryeng out of the constellation and clymat of his destynies, he complained of his unhappie case in this sorte:—

DISCOURSE V

The complaint of Cornelyo beinge in exile.

'Yf my offence were as greate, as my punyshmente is grevous, I wolde thinke no submission worthie of my place, nor my falte meete to be dispensed withall; or if I had as justlye deserved this wronge, as I am sewer to suffer the smarte, I had no reason to commence cause of complaint agaynste the malice of the world, and muche lesse accuse the iniquitye of present tyme; nor yet crye out of the synister disposition of Fortune, to whom as the poetes seame to attribute some power over our worldly affaires (bestowinge their indevor therin I thinke) rather to feede the time and ymagynacions of the people with a shape or figure of an unconstante creature, then wyth intente to perswade a credit in so senceles an ymage. So I am also perswaded by the present experience of her inconstancie, that she is not so liberall to geve as readye to take awaye, and lesse hable to contynue the felicitie wherwyth she seames to flatter the conceite of the simple. For whom she hath brought to beleve in her, she makes many times more desirous of glory, then hable to receive it. Wherin who maye more justely exclaime agaynste her mobylitie then the unhappie Cornelio; whom (being favored with the offer of a reciprocal affection, and at the pointe to be put in the possession of his desyer) shee hath not only taken the praie out of my mouthe, but comitted me wyth cruelty, into the vale of extreme desolacion? Of what moment are the greatness of princes, or to what end serves honor or highe callinge, seinge bothe the one and the other are subject to confucion, and readye to yelde at the leaste poffe of winde that bloweth from a contrary shoare? Yet if I were a simple cytizen or companion of meaner callinge, th'ennemie wolde neyther watche my doings wyth so manye eyes, nor pursewe my deathe by publike or pryvate invacion, and I suffered to live as free from the troubles and tumultes of the worlde, as farre from any care or accompte of the doings of great men; where nowe alas! th'only heighte of my estate, tipped wyth the tytle of honor, depryveth me of th'use of my contrey, societie of my frendes, and contemplacion of the thinge I holde no lesse deare thenne the healthe of my soule. But if any thinge colde stoppe the covetous humour of man, and everye

His mistres.

one (contente wyth the lot of his porcion) would cease to invade the dominion of an other, kinges shoulde sytt sewer in their troanes, and the pallais of princes voide of suspicious feare and care. And then (myne owne Plaudina) shoulde not I live wythout the companie of the, and thou have cause to doubt the firme constancie of thy servant; whose reputacion of honor and faythe towardes his prince, denieth hym for the presente, to honor the wyth the dutye whych thy vertues deserve. And, albeit it is no lesse follye then tyme loste to travel in dispite of Love and Fortune, whyche bothe have conspired my destruction, and joyned in consente to kepe mee frome enjoyenge the favor of her who merites the service of one more noble and worthie every way then I; and because no distance shal dissolve my affection, nor dymynishe the leaste braunche of good will, nor yet time herselfe have power to overtreade the vertue of my faythe— I will so dispose of the reste of my life, as the same shall make absolute declaracion of the unfained constancie of my mynd, wyth the sincere vowe of loyaltie, whiche I have sworne and dedicated to the service of her devine bewtie, even untill the laste and extreme seperacion of my soule and bodie. Wherin, because adversatie is rather subject to many miseries then apte to admit any consolation, and that the goodwill of fortune comes rather at unwares then won by speciall sute, I wyl, perforce, contente myselfe wyth the gyfte of presente time, and, usinge the remembrance of my mistres as a speciall moderation of the hardnes of my exile, so honor th'ymage and picture of her bewtie, painted alreadie in th'intralls of my harte, that th'only remembrance and inward viewe of my deare Plaudina shall norishe the remeinder of my miserable daies, wyth no lesse contentment being absent then I toke pleasure in the regarde of her glistring eyes, and the rest of her delicat proporcion, at such time as my good fortune was content to geve me the glee of her presence.' Wherein, albeit hee spente certeine time, wyth ymagynacion that his ladye harde the crye of his complaintes, and gave judgemente of his syde, for th'assurance of his loyaltie, yet he forgat not to hawnte the companies of the dames of Mantua, refusinge to resemble in

DISCOURSE V

any wise the order of those shaded lovers, who, brought up in the skoole of one Romanto Tristano, or leadinge th' erraunte and obscure lyfe of Amydes, do fill the ayre full of their dollorous sighes, and sekynge to recorde their passions in the depe and hidden caves of the earthe, delyte not in the place and good felowshippe of good hawnte; neyther are they at any time so well in quiet, as when they feele their desolate bodies shrowded under the shade of solitarye places, or when, by longe ranginge the wildernes and deserte landes, they fynde by chaunce some odd hermitage, farr from the use and ordynary habitacion of men, where fedynge only upon the hoalsomnes of the ayre, and ymagynacion of their owne conceite, they pyne awaye in expectation that some good aungell or oracle wyll appeare unto theim wyth the message of good newes, or els the fatall sentence of their lyfe. As those kynde of tortles or domesticall fooles, degeneratinge from the planet that governeth th' inclynacion of true lovers (whose complexion ought not to be dymmed wyth the darkenes of desolate places) do seame to have their consepcion from under the angrye and crabbed constellacion of Saturne, wishinge willinglie that their ladies were converted into the shape of *Nymphes*, whom the poetes faine to wander and dwell in the thickest covert of the woddes, to th' ende that none but they shoulde enjoye the glaunce and viewe of their bewtie; so the true and loyal lover (armed wythe unfayned assuraunce of his vowe) doubts not to advance himselfe in the presse of moste repaires, thinkinge he can geve no greater proofe or declaracion of hys constancie to his mistres then to withstande th' ymportunities and alarms of other. Which you may note in this Cornelio, who, visiting the assemblies and metings of the ladies of Mantua, was marked ymediatly of one of the chiefest ladies of the citie, and regarded wyth so good an eye that fallinge extremely in love wyth the vertues and other dexterities of the banished knight, she embraced hym so straitelye in the intrals of her harte, that, uppon th' instante, she had forgot the honor and reputacion of her state, wyth the vaile of shame (which ought to seele the eyes of great ladies and correcte the humor of their

The order of a desolate lover.

The desier of a desperat lover.

fonde appetit) in executing th' office of a shamefull clyent, in a cause whiche she neyther ought to have solicited, and muche lesse condiscended unto, by force of any ymportunities howe great soever they were, if it had not bene for th' assistance of an olde neighbour of hers; who, understandinge the disease of her mistrys, promissed her diligence to procure the remedye with expedicion. Wherein she omitted no oportunitye as occasion was geven: for, attendinge the offer of convenient time, she founde the meanes to encounter Cornelio one morninge all alone in a churche, at whom she roaved in this sorte:— DISCOURSE V

'The condition of nobilitye consistes not so muche in the title and surname of honor, as in the commendacion and effecte of true vertues appearinge in a grafte discended of so noble a stocke. And the greatest thinge (syr) that makes a valyante man knowen to the worlde, and preserveth the renowne of his reputacion in entyer, is not to refuce th' occasyon and offer of his fortune, geven him for th' increase of his felicitie. Neyther can any man more abuse th' excellente giftes and goodnes of nature, then to contemne th' instinct and pryviledge whyche she hathe geven him for the decoracion of his estate.' The gentleman, somewhat astonied wyth the soddayne encounter of his neighbour, seamed to marveile no lesse at the retorike of th' olde Marmotta, then muse what myghte be th' intent of such formal protestacion. Wherwyth, for his parte, havinge no great leasure to devise for his aunswere, cold not replie but wyth tearmes of curtesye in this sorte:—'Yf at unwares my tonge hath stolen a libertie, in talkynge the thynge that hathe offended the eares of you or any other, or by like oversighte have don that whyche your disposition can not brooke nor the law of curtesye allowe, wyth the consente of your opinyon, I am rather to be pardoned by course then punished by justice. For that suche offences, beinge common and naturall, seame rather to procede of ignorance then of th' instigacion of malice, or corrupcion of the mynde. Wherin as your judgemente is no lesse equall then my innocencye meritorious, so, if it wyll please you to reveale the chiefe pointes of my falte, you shal see the hardenes of the penaunce, with treble The firste metinge of the baude with Cornelio.

DISCOURSE V

satisfaction of the wronge, shall take awaye the foulnes of the fact.' Which kinds of curteys replie liked not a litle the eares of the messenger; who, accomptinge him worthie to enjoye the good will of the greatest ladie of a contrey, gave judgement of the victorie wyth ende of th' enterprice. Wherin, notwithstandinge, she was no lesse deceaved, then shame, with the respect of her callinge, oughte to have cloased her mouthe from solycitinge so badd a case. For, albeit she discovered point by poynte the cause of her cominge, with a peculyar commendacion and praise of the ladie that sent her (forgettinge not to decypher artyfyciallie her sondrye properties and many giftes of nature, but chieflye her unfained affection, with readie offer and conformetie of that whereof lawe of kinde makes all men not only desierous, but studie to wyn by longe sute and serviceable diligence) yet wantinge force to shake the walls of so sewer a fortresse, her arte seamed also insufficient to perswade the mynde of Cornelio; who, albeit was of opynion and knew well enough, that the wisedom was no lesse in acceptinge th' offer of a good adventure then the follie of doble moment to refuce the preferment of fortune, yet was he so whollie resolved in the loyall love of his ladye at Millan, whose only and simple remembrance restored suche a remorce of the vowe whiche his harte had alredye sworne on her behalfe, that he seamed more willinge to embrace the last and fatal dome of his lyfe then desyerous to abuse the least point of his dutie and service unto her. And, albeit the desyers wee feele sturre in us, ymporte no other thinge then a certeine mirror, or lokinge glasse, receivinge the darke ympressions whych our appetites present unto us; and that they whiche ymagyn whole castells of constancie, with protestacion never to fainte in the vowe they have made, do no other thinge thenne give occasion to writars to bewtyfye their histories with the circumstaunce of their follie, with suche a blowe and open mockerye in the ende, that they sticke not to describe their vaine and fonde humor uppon publike stage in the hearinge of all the worlde—yet am I of opynion, that as the garmente that is fyt for every man is well framed for no man, so the harte

that is as apte to declyne as the appetit is readie to sommon, is neyther meritorious of favor in any sort, nor meete to kepe place in the rancke of the vertues—chieflye where hee refuseth th' objecte of his owne choice. Neyther is it possible that two sonnes geve lighte to the worlde at one instante, nor once conveniente for the mynde of one man to embrace th' ymage or figure of more then one saint. Wherein th' example of Cornelio, callinge us to th' ymytacions of the like vertue, serves also to confute th' opposicions of certeine covetous ladies nowe adaies; who, rather gredie of glorie thenne hable to deserve it, do not sticke to whet their wittes and inveighe synisterly againste th' inconstancie of men, transporting the whole title and honor of true loyaltie to themselves, as though there remained no sparke nor showe of that vertue in the hartes of men; who, as they were the firste partakers of that gifte, so the constante order of their doinges and lyves (being founde for the moste parte the longest in breath) do argue them no lesse worthie of that perfection, then hable to excede that flatteringe crew of flickeringe creatures; who, in robbinge us of that which we deserve by juste title, doe seame to bewtifye theimselves wyth the merite of other mens vertues. But, because the eares of al women can not brooke the hearinge of a troth, and that the pursewte of this quarrell (arguinge a more daunger in th' adventure, then gaine in the victorye) mighte set abroache the faltes of some of our contreywomen, I am contente to geve theim that they will have by force, and retiringe to the place of my historie, declare unto you the aunswer of Cornelio to the messenger: —'I am sorye' (saieth he) 'the large honor and liberall offer whyche you seame to presente unto me on the behalfe of your lady and mystrys is of a more highe momente thenne eyther I am worthie to possess, or hable to requite wyth equall merite. Wherein, because the harde condition of my presente state seames my chiefest enemye to soo greate a prefermente, I doubte howe to seame thankefull to her and satisfye the tyme both together. Albeit as thinges ymposssible are not to bee pursewed, and offences forced of necessitie are moste meritorious of pardon, so, beynge not hable

Men more constant then women.

Cornelyo aunswerethe the baude.

DISCOURSE V

to aunswere her expectacion in counterchaunge of affection, I am onlye to racke the litle talente that is lefte me to so highe a pyn, that onlye she shall dispose of my honor and lyfe, wyth all that I have in the worlde, at her pleasure; whyche it maye like her to use as a supplie of the present dutie and service she demaundes at my hande. Onely beinge at this presente not the maister of myselfe, nor the use of my harte in mine owne possession, my sute is that shee rather blame the wronge whiche time offreth to us bothe, then note me of any disdayne in refusinge the frendshippe of her who merites more then I am hable to performe. For if my harte were as free from forreine and former bondes as shee deserveth to be served, and that my affections did not excede th'ordenary ympressions whiche assaile the mynde of man, assure youre selfe shee shoulde not lyve longe unsatysfyed to her contentment, and muche lesse have cause to enter into suspection of jeleous disdaine in me for retorning the offer of that which maye serve for a present to the greatest prince in Italy. Neyther will I so much abuse the proffer of her acquaintance or cause of your comminge, as eyther her liberal offer, or vehemencie of your importunities on her behalf, shal move me to resolve a worse opynion, or more slender credyt, on the honour or honestie of her that sente you; desyeringe you for end to preferr my excuse accordinge to th'integretie of the same, with this further addicion and humble requeste, that she bee as bolde to employe me in any other respecte, no lesse amplye, and so far furthe as my honor and lyfe will extende.' 'More honestlie' (saithe the messenger) 'colde you not refuce the offer of that whyche earste was never presented to any, and muche lesse so neare the poynte to make a price of so precious a marchandise. Neyther do I thinke you worthie of the title of that courtesye whereof you are commended, nor yet am I of mynde that youre harte is capable of the noble vertue of love; seynge the renowne and honor of her, whose bewty only hath the greatest princes of Italye in awe, cannc make no breache nor enter. And who woulde seame of so slender judgemente (onlesse hee hadde quite disclaimed the order of reason) that, beinge

proffered frelie that whiche princes can not get by any sute, and not onely desyered, but pursewed wyth greate instance, wolde let slippe the gyft of so good a fortune, and make chippes of the frendshippe of so faire and curteous a ladye? Wyth what face dare you visyt hereafter th'assemblies of greate dames, havinge committed so greate a falte on the behalfe of her whose goodwill you do not deserve, if her curtesye did not call you to that preferment? Are you of opynion that the merite of your bewtie and other proporcion excedes the honore and heighte of her that woeth you? Ymagyn the same to bee of suche force, that it is hable to drawe ladyes to doate of you even unto deathe, woulde you become so harde-harted as to encrease your glorye, wyth th'exployt of so great crueltie? If you bee subjecte to soo fonde a humor, you mustes nedes bee incydente to the juste revenge which the god of love is readie to thonder upon such as seame to holde his loare in skornful contempte. Whereof as I have harde mo examples then my skill is hable to reveile in good order, being never trained in the torning over of volumes and histories; so I wishe chieflie the plage of Narcissus maye put you in remembrance of your present oversighte, leaste in disdaininge the frendshippe of such as excell yourselfe every way, you doate uppon th'ymage of your owne shadowe, and by that meanes yelde treble usurye to the wronge you offer her whose loyall affection deserveth a better rewarde then the retorne of a repulse of so small ymportance.' Wherwith, Cornelio, cuttinge of the reste of her waspishe discourse, desyered her to presse him wyth no greater ymputacion, then his offence deserved. 'For' (saieth he) 'in tearminge me unworthie of the title of curtesye, and that my hart is to harde to admit the impression of love, you rather slaunder me by ignorance then accuse me by justice; seinge the onlye force of love hath forced alreadie a vowe of my affection and harte to a ladie of Millan, whose presence albeit the iniquitie of fate hath taken from me for a time, yet shall the only remembrance and inwarde regarde of her bewtie and vertue, suffice to minister sufficient moderacion and chiefe compfort during the angry dome of my hard exile. Neyther shal the force

Narcissus doateth upon his owne shadowe.

DISCOURSE V

of any enchantment, and much lesse the charme of any intysing perswacion, prevaile so far over mee as once to make mee transgresse the leaste point of my confirmed loyaltie. Wherin, as the salemandre lyves in the flame, so wyll I pyne away and consume by peecemeale in the passion of true love, til the angrye fates, ceassinge to wreake their malice upon me, do place me in the possession of the due meede of my merite.'

Here this olde enchauntresse (understandinge the circumstance and full of his disease, and that his harte was so thorowlie lymed with the bewtie of his ladie at Millan that it denied th'impression of her offer—wherein albeit there appered an ympossibilitie to wythdrawe, or at leaste to procure moderacion to the vehemencie of his affection—yet, beinge no lesse loath to take a foyle in her enterprise then desyerous to performe her charg to th'uttermost, wyth intent to retorne the messenger of absolute contentement or undowted dispair) thoughte not to leave hym till shee hadde syfted and tryed every synowe and vaine of his disposicion. And havinge but one pece of retoricke remayninge, she boolked it out, under a covertely kinde of reprehending his folie, in this sorte:—'Are you one of that vaine crue' (saithe she) 'and archfooles of the worlde, that, striving to bende the bow of loyal lovers, do make a glorie of a thing as requisite in love, as cowardnes or wante of courage in the soldiour meinteining skirmish against the enemie? Do not you thinke that a woman of indifferent judgement will not rather laughe at such folye in her servant then allowe his fonde constancie, begon without reason, and kepte with so small discrecion? And, albeit it is glorye of a ladye to be onely embraced and dearly beloved, and that they have (as it were by a speciall instinct of nature) a desyer above all creatures to be the only possessours of the hartes of their lovers, do you not thinke, for all that, that they give not leave and libertye to theyr servantes to make a seconde choyce or chaunge of mistres, to th'ende they maye be thorowly resolved of the loyaltye of their servante, and he discerne the true difference betwene the affections of bothe his ladies? And sewer that hart

Constancie.

is wroughte of strange mettal, and the sprite of slender capacitie, that, beinge bounde (as it were) to a taske, is subjecte only to one simple desyer, without power to bestow his regardes in more places then one. Admit constancie to be as greate a vertue as you make it, and that the faith in love is to be kepte withoute violacion, I praye you, in asking you one question by frendshipp, let me be aunswered by the veray touch and reaport of your conscience.—What assurance have you of equalitye or semblable affection at the handes of your mistrys of Myllan, whom you have more reason to doubte then cause to beleve? Do you thinke that you are only beloved, or that beinge punished by exile, without greate hope eftesones to recover you, she can continue as faythfull for her parte, as you seame foolishe in beinge the slave and subject of an ymage or shadowe of a thynge so farre hence? No! no! do awaye theis toyes of small substance, and let my experience, Seigneur Cornelyo, prescribe you one chief and generall rule, that no woman beinge once disposed to love, and havinge the object of her fancie taken out of her presence, is so hable to represse the humour of desyer, or correct th'instigacion of her appetit, as it is eyther in her power to disclaime at her pleasure, or degenerat from that wherin she hath a facilitie by nature; but as one spoiled of all resistance and arguments of vertue, she ceasseth not to followe the queste of her licencious inclinacion, till she have founde freshe supplie to enter the lystes, and paye th'arrerages of hym that first conquered the place. Women be neither equall wyth saintes nor like unto angels, neyther are they made of other mettal then suche as is distilled of th'imperfections of yourselves; and, in place of priviledge or free dispence from the passions of love, I affirme theim to excede all other creatures in the vehemencye of that impression, and chieflye where the effect doth not followe th'assurance of the worde. For as the drawinge glaunces of the eye, and pleasaunt platt of the tongue, is rather an earnest penny of the bargaine then a ful consommacion of th'aggrement, so the hungrye appetit of the hart affected is never satisfyed to his contentement, till he have tasted of the delicate frute growynge in the

Women derived of the imperfections of men.

DISCOURSE V

Faith to be observed where the desyer is performed.

middest of th' orcharde and paradise of love; whiche onely concludes and knyttes up the reste of th' imperfect bargain. Wherin as I must confesse unto you, that both the lawe of loyaltye is to be observed, and faith kepte invyolable, where we fynde an unitie of affection and full effect of our desyer; so to bestowe love in the ayre, and lvye without hope of the thing that is wished, I accompte it rather the part of a madman then office of one that hath his wittes at commandment. Nether doth the ende of suche pynyng conceites importe other consequence, then a loathsom wearines and unnatural hate of lyf, with continuall expectation to dye, and an everlastinge remembrance of hys follye after hys death. And for your parte, comparynge the symptomes of your present passion with th' unlikelihod I see to have spedie ende of youre martirdom, you bringe in remembrance the miserable state of the simple sparowhake; who, beinng hooded to take away her wildnes, syttes all the day longe beckinge upon her Jesses and whettinge her beake uppon the pearche, rather in dispaire then certein of the comming of her keper. Let me pearce that harde harte of yours with perswacions of reason, and seame not so rashe in refusinge the goodnes of Fortune—who albeit is accompted an enemy to moste menne, yet is she also frendlie to some—and ymagyn that once in the course of your lyfe she kisseth your cheke, and holdeth her lappe open with an offer of a good torne, whiche, if you refuce, is not to be reclaimed eftesones by any arte or pollecie. Convert your affection founded upon such slipper substaunce, and no lesse incertaine of his due mede, into a ballance of equall frendshippe and harte of semblable honor and vertue; and exchang at last these languishinge conceites that tormente your pynynge sprite for a pleasure no lesse precious then of great merite, who is no lesse readie then willing, and more apte to offer then you hable to receive. Cease, hensfoorthe, to love uppon credyt, and crye out of the shadowe or figure of a thinge that hathe neyther eares to heare your complainte nor meanes to releve your distresse; and thinke that the glorye of love consistes not in the simple desyer of the mynde, nor in the foolishe provacacions of our vaine conceites, but, pass-

ing further, the pleasante rewarde and tryumphe of that victorye, consisteth in the consommacion of the worke; wythout the whiche, love seameth no other thinge then a bare platt or table, wherupon the painter maye drawe what proporcion hee lyste! And truely as there is no manne happie in love, nor hathe cause to vaunte of the victorye, but hee that encountrethe th'objecte of hys desyer; soo mee thinketh a manne shoulde not love that hee hathe not, nor desyer the thynge that is utterlye unknowen unto hym. I saye thus muche, syr, because youre resolute affection towardes youre ladye of Myllan seamethe rather to argue ann humour of frenzye then vertue in love, and vaine opinion then true effect; advisinge you for ende to have a care of yourselfe and speciall regarde to this laste request of myne, that is, in leavyng the shryne to honor the sainct, and to cloase your mouthe from gapinge after that you can not get, as the unquiet dogge in the night that barketh at the shadowe of the moone.'

The oration of this bawde seamed suche musicke to the eares and mynde of Cornelio, that he rather wished a continuance of her jargon then an abridgement of her tale; but seynge she gave ende to her discourse, with expectation to heare hys replye, he dysmissed her with this shorte aunswere:—'Albeit your present repeticion of th'abuse in love (seaminge in some respect to bee assisted bothe with rayson and justice) dothe discover diverse faltes in sondrye women (wherof, as you say, the most part deliteteth as much to ronne ryot and seeke a chaunge of pasture, as the other takes pleasure in the vertue of true constancie), yet oughte wee to use suche an integretie betwene the good and evill that the faltes of the wicked do not deface the renowme of theym that deserve but well. And, as you saye, it is harde for a manne to love that he hathe not, so I note no lesse rashnes in you to give judgement of the thinge you knowe not but by examinacion. For I am fullie perswaded, that no distance of places, nor adversitie of times, have power to dyminishe, and much lesse dissolve, th'affection of her, whose presence I hope hereafter to enjoye with no lesse pleasure, then her absence seames now to gyve me cause

Cornelio giveth his lasteaunswere to the baude.

DISCOURSE V

of annoye. And, albeyt I have not yet tasted of the frute whiche all lovers do wyshe, and fewe happen to fynde, yet dare I accompte my selfe as depelye in the favor of my absent mistrys as the best of that happye companie. And suche weakelinges as accompte no vertue in love but in th'encounter of their lascivius desyer, and can not rest satisfied except they crop the hearbe of pleasure, are alwayes founde more liberall in wordes then constant in love, and more hoat in the begynnynge then hable to continue to the end. Neyther do I see any experience to the contrary, but that the passion whiche I suffer ought rather too beare the true title of love then the surname of a simple desier, seynge the delite I take in the remembrance of her beautie is no lesse pleasure unto me then if I had alredye performed and tasted of the delicat effect of love; which I am determined to attende, tyl eyther the goodnes of a better fortune restore me to my desert, or the force of death give end to my desolacion; willing you herewith to correct your judgement, and cesse to inveyghe againste her, whose constancie and vertue only defaceth the usurped comendacion of the most of your corrupte sect. For the rest, the justice of my cause (I hope) wil make my excuse tollerable in the opinion of her that sent you; and for your paines I can but yelde you the choice of a thousande thankes.' Wherewith, mother retrician tooke her leave and retired, with lesse contentement in her bad successe then assured hope to prevaile in the beginning, towards her Mantuan lady; to whom recounting eftesones the particularities of her discourse with Cornelio, she concluded that he, beyng limed with another bushe, had no power to make a graunt of his good wil without a special pasport from Millan; 'where' (saith she) 'he hath lefte both body and hart, and appereth here but in the likenes and shape of a figure without sence or feelyng, and lesse hable to admitt the preferment of honor or proffer of reason.' Which albeit seamed greatly to grudge the conscience of the lady, chiefly for that she was intercepted of that which she accompted no lesse sewer then the articles of her crede or to be beleved, yet, waighing the reasons of his excuse with the raging oversight of herselfe in indifferent

ballance, she made of necessitie a vertue and retired to a pacience parforce, forgetting not to punish her falte with the pennance of repentance, and comend to the skies the incomperable loialty of Cornelio, with no lesse gratulation on the behalf of her that had choice of so constant a servant— who, for her part, also, at this while, was in no lesse care of his wel doyng then busily occupied in devise how to recover his presence and requite the passion of his painful torment, which he chiefly desyred and justely deserved. Wherein as she for her part wyshed no lesse to embrace hym then he meritorius to possess her; so, albeit there passed certaine letters betwene theim, seaminge rather to doble the desier of theim both then yeld moderation to the passion of eyther of theim, yet she founde the meanes to coaste the malice of her fortune with a contrarye sleyghte, by procuryng to her husbande a jorneye of xx or xxx dayes traveil. Whereupon, she dismissed imediatly a corrior to Cornelio with the reaport of the newes in this letter folowing:—

Plaudyna.

'Albeit (sir) Calamitie of her owne nature is so quarelous that she ceasseth not to assaile th'afflicted with continual sommonce of perentorye dispaire, yet oughte we not reappose so slender an assurance in the assystance of vertue as eyther to make a marchandise of the goodnes of our fortune, and much lesse sell the hope of future filicitie, nor yet utterlie despaire of the benefyt of time; who, as she is thankeful enoughe to suche as suffer her with pacience, so hathe she presentlye entred into suche compassion of our mutuall distresse, that, somonyng my husbande with a jorney of a monethes travel in forreine affaires, she hath opened us a most sewer meane to meete and rejoice together without daunger. Wherein, as all suche seldome proffers of frendshypp ought to be no lesse welcome when they come then they seame of tickle aboade when we have theim; so, if you wishe to be resolved of that which you doute, and have no lesse care of your owne contentement, my advise is you embrace the benefyt of so convenient a time; persuadyng yourselfe that if you were here, I wold communicate with you more liberally then I dare discourse by letter; and

Plaudyna advertiseth her lover of the departure of her husband.

DISCOURSE V

onelye yourselfe is of creditte to serve as a secretorye in affaires of such secret importance. Whereof you maye conster the meaninge without great studie. Only ymagyn that Fortune is not suche a nigarde of her frendship as spitefull yf her offer be refuced, and Time so disdaineful that she will not tarye a moment above her stynte.—Yours without change, PLAUDINA.'

Yf thies newes were welcome to Cornelio, I leave yt to the judgement of that amarus crewe, who seame so resolute and simple in their love that their lyfe is onely prolonged by a desyred daye but when they see an approche of their liberty, with licence to quenche their hungry myndes with the fode they chieflye wishe to feede uppon. God knoweth the small regarde they have to honor, and lesse respect to the dutie of their conscience; and with what slender advise and lesse time, they make the poore husbande a rampier of hornes to defend his forhead from the shott of th'enemie! Wherin, sewer, their delite is not so great, and glorie of so foule a conquest of suche comendacion, as she worthie of treble tormentes, who, for the glott of her fylthie desyer, and satisfyenge their founde ymportunities, dothe make no conscience to defile the mariage bedd of her husbande, take awaye the renowne of her former estimacion, deface the glorie of her auncestors, and leave besides a title of villanous reproche uppon her children and posteritie; of whose reputacion shee oughte to bee more carefull then myndefull to satisfie the gredye appetit of her owne pleasure, or folyshe pursuete of their filthie love. And from this fountaine of execrable abuse distilleth also the sondrie sortes of unnaturall divisions happening at this daye betwen noble houses and men of meaner discentes; the children detestynge the father, and the father abhorringe theim whome he thinkes to bee none of his, and one brother persecutinge an other with no lesse mortality of hate then if they were common enemies of forreine contreys. For the bed being once stained, the blod mixed, and the law of mariage abused, yt muste nedes follow that the frute procedynge of suche seedes can neyther degenerate nor bee without

corruption. Neyther can the son yelde honor or dutie to him whom nature denieth to bee his father. Wherein, albeit I have somewhat exceded the compasse of my commission, yet I am so persuaded of th'indifferencie of those fewe ladyes whiche fele theimselves toched with this shorte dygression, that they will not grudge with this parable of their falte; seyng truthe marcheth under oure enseygne, readye to advoche and witnes the circunstance of my allegacions. Which, like as I inferred, rather to advise you to eschew the lyke evil then for any derogacion of your honor, so yt maye like you al to excuse my reasons by th'integrety of the cause, and pardon me by justice; retiringe now with semblable pacience to the sequeile of our Cornelio, who, construinge the wordes of the letter accordyng to the meaning of the writer, ymagined by and by th'importance of th'affaires she had too communicate with hym. Wherein, albeit love moved hym on the one side to performe the desier of hys ladye, yet Reason on the other part required hym to be careful of his owne savetie, and not to buy a taste of his slypper pleasure with the price of his lyfe. 'For' (saith shee) 'if you go to Myllan, and be discovered by anye of the Frenche race, or frendes of theyr faction, your daunger wilbe to great to escape, and you shal come to too late a repentance of your follie.' Wherefore, ballancinge indifferently betwene doute and feare, with desier to use this occasion, leaste he myghte seame unthankefull to the goodwill and requeste of his mistres, he imparted the whole circunstance to one Delio, a deare frende of hys, of whom (beyng pryvye from the begynnynge to his amarus practise) he demaunded earnestly a speciall assistance of good councell, touchynge th'absolution of his present doute. Thys Delio, havinge trodden alredy the whole laborinth of love, and knewe by experience what an elne of suche follies was worthe, gave as ryghte a judgement of the disease of hys frende, as yf he had felte the movynge of his polses, or tried the disposition of his water againste the son in an urynall. Wherein he failed not to discharge th'office of a true frende in assaynge to remove th'occasion and mortefye the yll, with thies perswations:—

DISCOURSE V

Delyo persuadeth Cornelyo not to go to Millan.

'Like as,' sayth he, 'small soares require slender medecins, and great greves are wont to try th' utter moste of the arte of phizicke; and that the wise and experienced phizision, afore he undertake to cure the disease of hys patient, or give certaine judgement of his recoverye, doth not only examine th' occasion of his greif, but makes also his firste indevour to take awaye and mortifye the cause, afore he disclose the skil and hidden misteries of his arte; so the maladie of love, being nothing inferior to the ragyng oppression of the burnyng fever (who desyereth alwayes thinges that be hurtefulle, and escheweth the necessarie preservatives of health) is neyther to bee cured, nor delte withall in anye sorte, onlesse the pacient wil suffer the circumstance of his disease to be syfted to th' uttermost, and abide an incysion of the soare even to the quicke; to th' ende that by th' operacion of the *Cataplame* whiche shalbe ministred to you, you dispayre not of recoverye (althoughe there appeare diverse lykelihodes of daunger) nor I broughte to answer for my frendshipp, whiche I proteste to be without spot of dishonest intent. And as it is no lesse necessarie for hym that is sicke to reapose a speciall credit in his phisicion then the minister of medecins to bee of exquisite skyll (for that the opinion and conceite of his connynge, importes a greate consolation to the mynde of hym that is sicke) so you muste neyther denie the vertue of my medecine to worke his force, nor doubte of any thing I meane to tell you; for the tale can woorke small effecte where the reaporter is of slender credit. Therfore, afore I sifte you any further, I requeste you onely of one thing, as moste chief and necessarye to prevent the present peril whiche attendes you: I meane that, in chaungynge your affection, you wyll also dismisse and breake the resolucion wyche I knowe your harte hath alredye determined. The disposicion and exterior apparance of youre countenaunce, argue a wonderfull devocion you have to visitte your oracle and saint at Millan; whiche also I coulde well admitte, if I sawe not in the ende of that vayne pilgrymage, a harde pennance accompanied with more perils then ever happened to the son of Anchises, undertakynge to visitt th' infernall valleyes by the guide of his Sybilla. You

knowe well enough your banyshment from Myllan proceded of rebellion; and that your offence is so haynous in the conceite of the majestie theare, that onelye the price of your heade can make the attonement and quenche the rage of his wrath. And, seinge the sleighte of your enemies and malice of fortune have dogged you and your doinges so nearely since your comming to Mantua, that you have not spoken or don a thinge of suche councell but Fame hath discovered your intent and made your adversaries partakers of your meaning, it behoveth you to thinke that of late she is not become so wel affected towards you, as she can or will conceile this last and most perillous resolution. Besides, in what sorte could you disguise your selfe that your sondrie secret markes wold not bewraye you, or what waye have you to passe where you are out of knowledge of al men? And admit your owne sleighte and pollecie were hable to prevayle above the malice of your fortune, in defending you from the daunger of the waye and diverse ambushes of your enemyes, are you so persuaded of th' assurance of your Plaudina, that you wil commit your life and losse of honor to the fained faith of a deceitefull woman, and that without a proffe of her constancie? Yf the miste of fonde affection doth so much dim your eyes, and gifte of present understandinge that you are not hable to discover the legerdemaines of lighte women, let my experience warne you to beware of the subtill sleightes and fyne allurementes of so venemous a serpente. What can you tell whether this traine she hath made be a stale to betraye you, and committ you to the mercye of your enemye? Or peradventure she hathe sente for you, because she seeth an impossibilitie in th' enterprice, and rather to brynge you in daunger then of intent to yelde satisfaction to your desyer. But lett us conster her meaninge to the best, with ymaginacion that her faith is without corruption, and that she is no lesse desyrous to see you then you (assotted upon her beautie) seame reddye to run thorow the fyer of a thousande perils, only to content her; will you by so vayne a pleasure, that is of lesse moment or abode then the thoughte of a man, at so deare a price as the losse of your honor and lyfe? Remember that the end of that

DISCOURSE V

DISCOURSE V

enterprise can not be good, whose begining is not founded uppon discrecion, and sequell governed by the rule of raison: neyther can you more greatlye deface the auncient renowme of your honor, nor leave a greater spot of reproche to your house and frendes that live after you, then to conclude and ende the course of your life, in the purseute of so dishonest a queste. And your enemyes can not so lardgelie triumphe in your overthrowe and deathe, as your frendes have cause to lamente that your owne rashenes and follie were the only furtherours of the fatall bane of your lyfe. Whereof, the contrary parte, yf, being cut in peces in the service of some noble prince, or yelde to the loare of nature in som valiant exploit or enterprise of warr, you shold not only aggravate the praise of your lyfe passed with the glorie of an honorable death, discarge your frendes and succession of al imposicions of villanous infamie, but also force your enemyes to a conversion of their malice into a general comendacion of your vertue and undouted faith towardes your prince. Besides, if you will wayghe the mortall plages threatened in the gospell to be thondered upon th' adulteror and suche as contaminat the maried mans bedd, or rightly measure the penaunce of the falte with the foulnes of the fact, you shal not only judge with me that there is no lyfe more dampnable afore God, nor deathe more skandalus to the worlde, then to be overthrowne in the combat whiche of ryghte is due to bee parformed by another; but also that there is more vertue and ease in sufferance, then profit or pleasure in hast, or comoditie in rashe execution. But, yf the power of the fleshe, prevailynge above your resistance, hath sturred up this humor of hoat desier, whiche seames to presse you so far that you make no conscience to exchange your former glorie for a title or surname of a fylthie adulteror, go not so far to seke your destruction, seing Mantua presentes you with sufficient choice and change of releif, better cheape, and with less peril, then the hazarde of reputation or losse of lyfe.'

This charme of Delyo seamed so to enchante and drive reason into the waveringe mynde of the Myllanois, that hee tooke respite to replie till the nexte morninge, thanking him notwithstanding of his frendlie advertisementes, whiche

(saith he) have so unseeled the eyes of my mynde that I fynd myselfe now hable to discerne that whych love wold not suffer me earste to perceive, and muche lesse to feare or doubte. Wherewith, retiringe to his lodginge, hee passed the nighte in the onely contemplacion of his fancie: wherein appered suche warr and contrarietie of thoughts, with figures of hollowe conceites, that the desyer and course of slepe, was whollie converted into an humor of uncerteine ymagynacions. And if, by chaunce, his eyes offred to cloase their liddes, and sommon the reste of the partes to the quiet reapposed in sleepe, the remembrance and care of his buysynes, interruptinge the office of the eyes, presented eftsones a new conflict and seconde supplie of his passion; in such sorte as, beyng to weake to resiste the alaram, he yelded to the stronger parte, whiche was the maisterles appetit of sensualitie; and, holdinge more deare the pleasures of the fleshe then the savegarde of his life, determined to take the forde, and trye if fortune wolde performe asmuche as shee seamed to promise by a flatteringe hope (whych appeared in his ydle braine) to embrace his mistres without daunger; ympartinge the nexte daye his resolucion to his deare frende Delyo. To whom saith he:—'Because perils are commonly made greater by reapport then founde daungerous in th'adventure, and that all likelehodes seldom or never do happen, the valyant ought not to feare the thinge that is doubtfull, nor dread the simple movinge of a shadowe. Neyther is there glorie of the victorie, but where th'adventure excedeth th'expectacion of men. Wherfore I am perswaded to geve a charg of the good will of fortune, and take my jorney towardes Millan, tomorow; wher I bee sommoned wyth the writ of my destynies, or malicious dome of unhappye fortune by death. Myllan wyll serve me as well of a tombe as eyther Mantua or other santuarie of the worlde. Neyther can I make a better declaracion of my fayth towardes my mistres then in defyenge the feare of so many perills, to appeare more readie to obey her commaundemente then curious and carefull of myne owne life: whyche I accompte ymploied with no lesse justice on her behalfe then honor to myselfe, if the same be put to extreme tormentes and utterlie

Perills be greater in reaport then daungerous in th'adventure.

DISCOURSE V

executed in the place wher the view of her own eyes may bee th' indifferent judges betwene my firme constancie and small dissymulacion. Neyther can I leave her a more precious pawne of myne indissoluble love, then, beinge cut in peces in the pursewte of her service, to leave the walls and posterns of her pallais painted, and all to besprent, with the bloode of the most loyal servant and frend that ever bare name to do honor or service to any of that noble sect.' 'Your desperat resolucion' (saith Delyo) 'excedinge all th' experience I have harde or redd of any that have bene possessed with the like infection, argueth the unbridled humor of love to be a kynde of rage, a thousand times more straunge and lesse reasonable then eyther the burning fever, or frantike maladie of suche as are affected with the fury of frenzye. For what greater follie, or rather desperacion, can be noted in the madman then to ronne headlong in to the middest of the fyer, or commit himselfe unarmed to the mercie of the glaves and sharp swords of his enemie?' How may a man tearme this same amarus rage, and effect of smal reason and lesse discrecion, which accompanie suche as make themselves a praie to their proper sensualitie, if not some spirite or lymne of Sathan, sent to torment us in making us th' abhomynable workmen of such miracles of mischiefe? And he that sayth that love procedeth other wayes then of ourselves, seameth rather to mocke the truth then hable to justefy his argument by approved authorities; seing the mischief is derived of ourselves, and norished of the corruption of our nature, whose wicked force prevaileth so much over the gifte of our understanding, and darkeneth the vertue of the spirit, that wee are denied to se, and muche lesse to treade, the pathe of our dutie, honestie, or conscience. But th' amarous crew of fryvolus lovers now a dayes, eyther to support their dampnable enterprises with a boulster or showe of a newfounde vertue, or to set a more braverie of their doinges then eyther reason or conscience will allow, or rather to make their secte favored with a fame or name of perpetuitie, have devised to christen their follie by the name of sincere and true loyaltie; whiche they also forget not to confirme by the title of constancie; as thoughe without the hazarde of the soule, and absolute

destruction of the bodie, suche execrable villenies and abuses of men colde beare the name, or be registred in the boke, of vertue. Wherin albeit I cold bee assisted with infynities of examples both familiar and aunciente, yet, because such discourse wold rather seame tedious then thankful to the guiltie mynds of a nomber of our contreymen, I am content to dismisse al antiquities, and pursewe my allegacion with th' authorytie of this Cornelio; who, rather enchaunted then ravished with the remembrance of his ladye and suggestion of his own follie, tolde Delio for ende, that if all the waies betwen Mantua and Myllan were strewed or pitched with rasors, and everye gate and windowe decked with the doble cannon readie charged to salute hym at his cominge, yet, making litle or none accompte of these mortal perils in respect of the dutie he seamed to owe to his deare Plaudina, he failed not to begyn to perform the sommonce of her letter the next morning: when, with ij servants no lesse strange to him, then unknowen to al men, and himselfe attyred in the wede of a marchant travellor, he departed Mantua at the opening of the gates. And marching no lesse spedelie then by secrete and unknowen pathes, he measured his time according to th' importance and danger of his enterprise, in such sort as he gat within the walls of Myllan at the verie last glymmer and cloasing of the evening: wher, refusing the house of his mother, because the prospect, opening upon the pallais of hys chiefeste enemye, seamed more apte to discover, then hable to hyde hys being ther, he addressed to a deare frende of his, called Messieur Ambrosio, where beyng let in, in the darkest of the evenyng, he was lodged in a lowe chamber, joyned as a pendle to th' uttermost corner of the house, most convenient to worke his secret misterye.

DISCOURSE V

His first indevor after his saffe arryval at Millan, was to send for an appoticarye whose fidelitie he had earst proved in the enterchaunge and conveighe of diverse letters betwene his ladie and hym; who, not so much amazed to see hym whom he loked not for as glad of his comminge for the contentement of Plaudina, assured hym of the departure of her husbande. His second diligence appeared in th' expedicion he used to advertise his mistrys of his commynge; whom he

DISCOURSE V

requested by a letter, under the conduit of this colcarior, to appoint a convenient leasure, that he might speake to her in secret. 'For' (saith he) 'the conference I have to impart with you, is of other importance then to be debated in the hearyng of witnesses, and much lesse recorded by anye then the only presence of ourselves.'

The ladye, althoughe she desired nothyng so muche as the presence of her servant, whose only comyng seamed almoste to make her excede the bondes of reason for joye, yet was she semblablie traunced in a passion of dreedefull conceites and doubtfull feare: the one for that she feared the malice of the Frenchemen, the rather because they extended weekelye a privye searche uppon all the houses and places whych they judged frendes to Cornelio; the other and chiefe cause of her dollor was, for that by the wronge datyng of her letter, she failed of the daye of the departure of her husbande; whereby she had not only procured to hym a more daunger then neded, but also abused his adventure in beyng not hable to give so longe a time to their pleasures as he justelye deserved and they bothe desired. Notwithstandyng, she retorned the messenger with a gentle aunswere, wherein, above all other thinges, she gave singler comendacion to his firme loyaltie, and no lesse falte to her owne follie and rashenes; whyche, because she woulde not onelye excuse, but also countervaile, or rather excede, wyth a recompence to his contentacion, she willed hym by the messenger to passe by the gate in the attire of a masquer, where she woulde attende his commynge about x or xi of the clocke the same evenynge, resolvyng uppon a certeine watche word or other secret instructions whereby she mighte discerne hym from the reste of his felowshipp. Yt is to bee thoughte Cornelio did neyther mislike the message, and muche lesse forgett the hower of appointmente, nor yet seame a cowarde in this chiefest exployte of his adventure. I am rather of opinion, that his foolishe rashenes dyd so much excede the vertue of the minde, that yf the whole garrison of the Frenchemen had bene encamped in the streete, and redie to receyve hym uppon the pointe of their pickes, he woulde rather have accepted the offer of present death then lost so good an

occasion to encounter a simple glaunce or glee of his greate frende; who, no lesse mindefull of her promisse then readie to performe it wyth a double diligence, in hope to enjoye an interest of suche pleasure as love yeldes to suche as Fortune makes happie and hable to receive, attended hys commynge at the place and hower of accorde. And as she was one of the best courtiars, passinge the rest of the traine and troupe of ladies in beautie, behaviour, and other giftes of flatterynge showe; so was she more courted wyth the continual haunts and companie of the gentlemen and princes of Italy then any other of what degre so ever she were; in such sorte as, at the instante and present approche of her servant, she was devisinge familiarlye with diverse gentlemen of the citie; who, seing this masque noblie mounted after the Spanishe order, make their staye afore Plaudina. And she, for her part, accepting their curtesye with a countenaunce more thankeful then of ordinarie, judged his embassage to the ladye to neede neyther secret witnes nor publike audience. Wherfore, not ignorant in th' office of humanitie, and because their presence shold seame no impediment to the proffit or pleasure of another, they toke leave of Plaudina resigning the campp and capteine to the marchant straunger; whom, yf they had knowen, they would suerlie have rated the penny worthes of that praye at to deare a price for him to have caried away without a gage or pawne no lesse pretious then his lyfe.

Cornelio astonied in the presence of his ladye.

Here, althoughe the fortune of Cornelio had blessed him with doble felicitie at one instant, bothe in avoydynge the place of companie and yelding hym large viewe of the presence of his mistreys without interupcion, yet love seamed to sturr up suche alteracions and diversaty of amaze within him that the use of his tonge was not only taken away, and the reste of his partes retired to a quyveryng feare, but also his eyes were so resolved in the gredy gaze of her bewtie, that, in place to do her honor with any devise or show of hys dutie by wordes, he broughte her in terror with the viewe of his dombe behavior; resembling rather the ghastly figure of Zelio Polino, whom the poetes, fayning to be enchaunted by his wyfe, do affirme that for the pennance of his offence and abuse towardes her, he is bounde upright

DISCOURSE V

agaynst a wall with a gag in his mouthe, without licence or libertye to speake til she pul the pegge from betwene his jawes. So Cornelio, albeit he was an orator sufficient enoughe, and specially in disputation of love, yet founde he here hys tongue so punished with the pennance of Polino, that he colde neither pleade for hymself at lardge, nor yet playe the parte of a stotting solicitor; till the longe viewe of her proporcion of majestie unseelyng hes eyes, lent hym also a countercharme to take away the misterie of his hiddeus traunce, with comission to make a breache of his scilence, and restore hym to th' use and libertie of his tonge, whyche he exposed as a tryall of his newe benefit in this sort:—

Cornelio speketh to his ladye.

'Yf all the giftes and good tornes whiche Fortune ever bestowed uppon suche as received frendship or favor at her hande were here presented unto me, with licence and libertie to chuse whiche I wolde have, I doute whether I colde pike oute one of suche a nomber, that were hable to countervaile the greatnes of my present encounter, or if they al had power to yelde me such contentement as I fynde in the contemplacion and regarde of your devine bewtye. And, for your parte, good madam, what greater proff can you have of the honor and service, with unfayned loyaltie, I have longe vowed unto you then, for the only respect of the dutie I owe you, to see me comitt that which is, and oughte to bee, moste deare to al men, to the hazarde of a thousande perilles. Wherein, notwithstandyng, yf the god of my destynies hath aggreed to toche me with the malice of hys dome, and publishe my sentence of death in this place, I excuse hym of present rigour—for that he hath deferred me hetherunto—and accomptes great justice in this fatal execution, seyng youre self shal be judge with what integretie I have served you since the first vowe and mocion of my affection.' Wherunto Plaudina replied:—'Yf you thinke you so depelie in the debte of Fortune, for the simple offer of so small a frendshypp, I accompte my selfe no lesse bounde to yelde her doble sacrafyze of semblable thankesgyvyng; not for that she hath added so greate a daunger to the declaracion of your goodwill, (whereof I never dowted) but because in grauntynge us a mutuall accesse and presence together,

Lyfe.

Plaudina replieth to her servant.

I maye (thoughe not so amplye as I wolde, and as you have deserved, yet in some parte) yeelde you the meede of so greate a merit. Yf you accompte the pleasure in death (happenynge in the pursute of this adventure) peculiar to yourselfe, you doo wronge to the sincere love and loyall affection of youre deare Plaudina; who, resolved to passe under the same sentence, will neythe excede you in lengthe of lyf, nor gyve you anye place in firme constancie of mynde. Neyther doo I greatlye feare the threates of present daunger, considerynge your auncient felicitie, whyche hathe alwayes delyvered you in anye your attemptes what difficultie soever appered in theim. Onelye I quarrell with myne owne follye in mystakynge the daye of the departure of my husbande; and greve no lesse with th'yniquitie of presente tyme, who, envyeng (as yt seames) our amarus enterprise, is readie to abridge the course of our desyered pleasure, wyth a soddaine retourne of hym whom I wishe without eyes in th'uttermost ende of th'orient. Notwithstandynge, as the faultes proceding from rashe oversight or ignorance are rather excusable then meritorious of free pardon, so, althoughe I have offended grevously, yet do I not dispaire of mercie, consideryng that, besides the confession of the faulte, I yelde me to suche pennance as shall please you to enjoyne me; which, also, you shall fynde me readie to performe, if, at the firste hower after this midnight, you comme hether in as secret a maner as you can, and striking but once uppon the clapper of the wicket, oure Janiquetta (whom you know hath bene heretofore a messenger of our love) shall open the gate and conveighe you into a place of pleasant torments; where, yf you fynde youre selfe greved with anye wronge I have don you, you may paye the revenge with such interest as you thinke good.' Wherewith, albeit Cornelio grudged at the spedie retourne of the goodman, yet, convertyng the passion of those heavy newes into a conceite of present gladnes for the franke and liberall consent of his ladye, he contented hymselfe with the offer of hys tyme and fortune, and yeldyng a lowe reverence to hys loftye Plaudina, retired in haste to his lodgynge; where, attendynge the approche of his hower of appointe-

Her husband.

DISCOURSE V

ment, wyth no lesse devocion then the papistes in Fraunce performe their ydolatrous pilgrimage to theyr ydoll Sainct Tronyon, uppon the Mont Auyon besides Roan, or our supersticious catholikes of England of late dayes to the holye Roode of Chester, or ymage of our Ladye at Walsingham, he seamed to attire himselfe for the bed as thoughe he woulde not sturre out of his chamber that nyghte. By whiche semblance or dissimuled showe, he dismissed the companye that was with hym, shuttynge the windowes and doares of his lodgynge, tyll the deade tyme of the nyghte, sommonynge all sortes of people to reste, seamed to putt hym in remembraunce of hys promisse and the thynge he chiefly desyered to performe; so that, arminge himself only with sleves of male, and a naked rapiour under his mantell, he marched towards the pallais of Plaudina, wythe more haste then good speede, and lesse assuraunce of savetye then likelihod of good lucke. For, as he accompted himselfe no lesse free from all daungers then farre from any occasion or offer of perill, so Fortune, displayinge the flagge of her malice, encountred hym soddainely with a desaster excedynge his expectation; whereby she warned hym (as it were) of the ambushe of future evils whiche were readye to discover themselves. And albeit this firste accidente was nothinge in respect of the other straung mischiefes which she ceassed not to thonder uppon hym, one in the necke of another, afore the ende of his enterprise, yet it oughte to have sufficed to have revoked, and made hym cross saile, from the pursute of so bad an adventure; seinge withal there appeared neyther reason in the attempt, nor honestie in the victorye. But who doubteth that the luste of the bodye is not the chiefest thinge that infecteth the minde wyth all syn; and that the beautie of a woman dothe not onely drawe and subdue the outwarde partes, but also levyeth suche sharpp assaultes to the inwarde forces of the mynde not sewerly rampierd in vertue, that they are not onely denyed to eschewe suche thinges as bee undoubtedly hurtefull bothe to the bodye and soule, but also drawen to desyer that which they ought not to ymagine, and much more abhorre to do as a thynge of greate detestation? Besides,

DISCOURSE V

Love makes a man valiant, or rather folishe hardie.

love is of so venturous a disposicion, sturryng up such corage in the hartes of those champions whome he possesseth, that he makes theim not onely unmindefull of all daungers, but also to seame hable to passe the lymittes of the son, wyth power to excede the bondes of Hercules and Bacchus. Neyther makes he anye thinge unlawfull, whiche he thinketh reasonable, nor gyveth glorie to that enterprise whiche is not accompanied with infynitie of perills. But as the wise man wisheth all estates to deliberat at large afore the devise bee put in execution, yeldyng no difference of rewarde, with a successe of semblable and equall effecte, to hym that rashely crediteth th' advise of hymselfe, and suche as committ theyr bodyes and doinges to one stroake of fortune; so are we warned, by th' authoritye of the same principle, to examyne the circumstaunce of our enterprises, and caste the good and evill that maye happen wyth so sewer and steddye a judgement that there can no daunger so soone appeare, but we maye bee assisted wyth the choice of ii or iij remedies to represse hym. Wherein, if Cornelio had bene as throwly instructed as he seamed altogether infected with the humour of follye, he neded not have fallen into suche daunger as he doubted least, nor dispaire of that whiche he seamed to desyer moste, and muche lesse assailed, even in the begynnynge and brunt of hys buysynes, wyth that soddaine feare, whiche earst he was not hable to ymagine, and nowe as unlykely and unprovided to shon. For as he attended the comming of Janiqueta to open the doare, beholde! there ronge in his eares a greate brute or noyse of the clatteringe of naked weapons and men in harneys, seaminge (as it was indeede) a set fraye betwene ij enemies in the ende or corner of the same streete, which was so hoatlye pursued, that one of the skirmishers, beinge hurte to the death, brake out of the presse, and, fleinge towardes the place where Cornelio stoode, fainted and fell downe dead at his feete, even as the maide opened the wicket to take hym in. Whiche was not so secretlye don, but the eyes of certeine neighbours, beholdynge the fraye oute of their windowes, discovered the goinge of Cornelio with a nacked sworde in his hande. Whereupon followed the alarme to the innocent lover, as

DISCOURSE V

you shall heare herafter. But beinge within the courte, and the gates shotte againe, he was leed by the litle *Darioletta* of their love, into a garderobe, or inner gallery, till the servantes were retired to reste; who, for the most parte, laye out of the house that night, beinge busye in visiting the banquettes abroade, accordynge to the epicure order of sondrye contreys in Christendome durynge the season of Shroftide, when diverse gluttons delite in nothing but to do sacrifyce to their belly. And having the reste sewerly locked in their chambers, and all occasions of suspicion or feare eyther prevented or provided for (as they thought) Plaudina sent for her servant into her chamber, thinking to worke th' effect of both their desyers, and plante the maried mans badge in the browes of her husbande being absent. But here they made their reckoning without their ost, and were forced to rise from the banquet rather with increase of appetyt then satisfied with the delicat dishes they desyered to feede upon. For as they had newly begon the preamble to the parte they ment to plaie, and entred into th' amarous exercise of kissinge and embrasinge eche other—whereof neyther the one nor th' other hadde earst made assaie together—beinge at the pointe to laye their handes to the last indevor and effect of love (which the Frenchemanne calleth *Le don d'amoureuse mercy*) they harde a greate noyse and horley-borley in the streete, of the garde and chiefe officers of the watche; who, fyndinge the deade bodye at the doare of Plaudina, began to make such inquisition of the murther, wyth threatenynge charge to understande the manner and cause of his deathe, that, amongest the neyghbours whyche behelde the fraie, there was one affyrmed that, at the same instant that the broyle was moste hoat, he sawe a tall yonge gentleman let in at the gates of Plaudina, with a sworde in his hande, armed on the armes wyth sleves of male. Wherupon the capteine of the watche beganne to bounce at the doare, as thoughe his force hadde bene hable to beate downe the walls; wyth suche a rowte and companye of Frenchemenne assistynge hys angrye indevor, that bothe the one and the other of oure lovers seamed indiffrentely passioned wyth semblable feare—

An order not necessarie for a common wealth.

the one dowtyng thys soddayne sturre and uproar of the Frenchmen to be rather a pryvye searche to entrappe him then an *inquirendum* for the murdor, wherof he was no less ignorant then innocent; the other dispairing no lesse of the delyvery of her frende, yf he fell once unhappelye into the handes of th'ennemye, then doubtynge the dyscoverye of her owne dishonestie, beinge knowen to conceile a stranger in the secret corners of her house. Wherein havying, albeit, but bad choice of meanes to avoyde suche ii threatenynge evills, and lesse tyme to take councell of their present perill, yet, beyng of opynion that in the savetye of the one consisted the sewertye of theym bothe, shee used the pollicie of the wise maryner or shypmaister, who, in the furye of a storme wil not sticke to prevent the destruction of the whole with the losse of the lesser parte, and, bestowynge his wares of precius value in the sewrest romethes of his shyp, makes no conscience in suche an extremety to expose the reste to the mercie of th'angrye waves: so knowynge that, yf Cornelio were not discovered, the matter woulde neyther growe to suspicion, and muche lesse to daunger or cause of feare, she willed hym to mounte into the middest of a narrowe chymney; where, beynge denied scoape to sytt or leane sometimes for his ease, the litlnes of the place gave hym onely licence to stande uprighte upon a barr of yron, rammed with stoane and morter in bothe sydes of the chymney; where, havynge his sworde drawen in his hande, he resembled th'ymage of some Jupiter holdynge a thonderbolte betwene hys fyngers, readye to throwe at suche as, disquietynge hys sleepe, do hunte the litle cryckettes chirpynge in the walles and crevisses in the earthe. And herselfe, as more hardye, or rather readye of wytt in extremeties, discendes to the court wyth all the keyes of her howsse in her hande, amongest the rude watche; where, after she had founde the capteine, she forgatt not to fordge sondrye causes of grudge against his discurtesye, reprehendynge his inorderly dealynge with many waspishe wordes; but chiefly for that at so indecent an hower, and unseamelie order, he soughte to abuse the reputacion of her husbande, in breakyng open the doares of his pallays and that in his

A woman more readye of witt then a man in extremeties.

DISCOURSE V

absence. Wherewith, albeyt her complaint seamed to importe a semblance of justice, with no lesse reason on her behalfe, yet the neyghbour or firste accusor, advowchynge eftesones his confession, forced the capteine (half agaynste his wil) to follow the searche. Whereuppon, he had the keyes delivered, with libertie to ransecke eche corner and cabynet of the house at his pleasure. Wherein he omitted neyther diligence in execution, nor pollicye in the searche. For there was no coffer escaped without his bottom torned upwarde: everye bedd and bolster was tryed with the point of a sharpp dagger; and no benche nor hollowe place apte to hyde a tennes ball was dispenced from the malice of thies rakehells of the watche. But when the Frenchemen in armor came into the chamber where our Cornelio was rammed up in the tewell of a chymney, God knoweth whether he wished hym at Mantua with hys frende Delio or no! And you lovers that have passed the lyke straites maye better judge his passion then I hable to reaport the misterie: but, methynkes I heare hym curse, and comitt to the devil, both love and all hys practises. And beynge in continuall expectacion that some roostye halbarde shoulde bee throste upp into the chymney where he stoode, I thynke at that instante he powred oute more prayers to God for his deliverie then ever afore hee made requestes or peticions to hys ladie to enjoy her beautie. Neyther ys it lyke that his appetit continued, or his amarus humor, so fervent as hys desyer greate to be further frome the place of suche daunger. Albeyt as yt is a generall rule that one evil never cometh alone, so this feare was not so greate as the future pennance of harde disgestion. Neyther had he scarce tyme to take breathe afore he was assailed with a seconde misfortune. For, understandynge the watche to bee retired, and the whole guarryson of th'ennemies without the gates, wheruppon (beyng at the point to discend from his smoaky pavillion, as one that accompted himself past the feare of fortune) beholde! the goodman alyghted at the doare; who, fyndynge the streetes pestered with people in armor, hys doares open, with hys house confused and all thynges out of order, was no lesse astonied then he had cause, and yet

not so abashed at the straungenes of the thynge as hys wyfe in doble dispair of meanes to avoyde thys seconde inconvenience. Albeyt as increase of perill, sturrynge upp a freshe supplie of shyftes, pearseth the uttermoste corner of the wittes, so Plaudina, standyng betwene the present offer of open shame and the malice of a most unhappye fortune, was dryven to retire to the benefitt of that gyfte whiche the philosopher attrybutes in comon to al women, sayinge that, in an extremety, the witt of a woman is so muche at commaundement, that she is as sewer of a shyfte as certaine of her lyfe. And makynge of necessitie a vertue, she used suche artificial sleighte in bleiring the eyes of the goodman John her husband, that he allowed greately the honest diligence of his wyfe, and blamed altogether th'abuse of the capteyne whome he threatened to requyte with semblable curtesye. Wherin, as she dowted nothing of the tractable nature of her simple husbande (beyng glad notwithstandyng to have so smothly appeased the humor of his just anger), so she accompted herselfe neyther free from cause of feare, nor quite deliverd from distresse, till she had made a meane to manifest the comming of her husbande to her lover in the chymneye; whom, as she knew to be passed the feare of the Frenchemen, so, dowting he wold dread no further daunger, but discende ymediatly from his frozen mewe, toke her goodman by the hande and led hym from place to place where the watche had lefte al thynges out of order, bringing hym at last into the chamber where Cornelio stoode, like a crowe in a gutter, or an oracle to give aunswer to suche as are desyerus to bee resolved of dowtefull demaundes. And albeit the vyolence of the frost with the nyppynge season of the wynter had so pinched al his partes with extremety of cold, together with the passion of feare which he felte duringe his abode in hys narrow castell or cage of small ease, that the pennance he indured seamed rather to excede the haynous respect of his offence then a sufficient punishment for his falte (beyng only a desyer, and no vyolacion, nor act don) yet the veraye voice of her husbande restored hym to suche treble perplexitie, that he seamed to feele th'approche and uttermost summonce of hys fates, and

DISCOURSE V

passe thorowe the laste traunce and passion of lyfe. For, beynge escaped from the daunger he feared most, he sawe hymself subject to th' adversatye he dowted leaste. Wherin, also, as the present viewe of hys seconde perill renewed a lyvelye remembrance of hys daunger paste, presentyng more ympedymentes to hys delyverye then meanes or wayes to escape, so, yf yt were not that necessitie geveth corage to the faint stomacke, and dispaire bryngeth often tymes a cause of good hope, I thynke (in defyenge all the delayes and dallyenges of fortune) he had at that instant abridged the pursute of his amarus enterprise, and naturall course of his owne lyfe, by showynge a tomblinge caste from the topp, or greeselye rooff, of his grymie pallais.

Necessetie geveth corag to the fainte harte.

But Plaudina had doble reason in her devise; both to advertise her lover (as yt were in a visyon) that, albeit he was bounde to too longe a devocion in so unseamelye a temple, yet he shoulde not dispair of the goodnes of a better fortune, and, also, not to seame jalous of her indevor and diligence in the redresse of his case, for that she colde not (without great argument of suspicion) habandon the companie of her husbande, till she had got him to bed. Wherein, notwithstandyng, her pollecie was no lesse frustrate, and she eftesones deceived, then the poore ymage in the chemney assailed with the malice of a third mischiefe: for her husbande, beynge in bed in hys owne cabynet, commaunded ii of his men that had attended him in his jorney to lye in the chamber wher Cornelio had passed the mistery of so many trances; which, albeit Plaudina resisted to th' uttermost she cold do, yet (mauger her hart) the authority of the goodman prevailed. Albeit, dowting the cold villains (rydyng all day in the frost) wolde have made a fier in the chymney, and either sacrafised the sainct, that ment nothing lesse then to become a burnt offringe, or smothered as an innocent that deserved not suche purgatorye, she gave speciall charge not to light so much as a candle within the chimney. For the rest, she prayed that the god and patrone of true lovers wold take such compassion of his present distresse, that if he denied him for that time the due guerdon of his rare and firme loyalty, yet, at the leaste, hee wolde graunte

him dispence and saffe conduit to passe thorow the pikes of his infortunat dangers. And as she was thus in earnest contemplacion to the majestie of the blinde god of Love for the safe delyverye of her frende, wyth no lesse care how to redeme him from the fylthye dongeon of the hollowe chymney wythout the raunsom of publike reproche to herselfe and doble daunger to hym; and he, also, for his parte, tvering of a patience perforce, with some hope and likelihod of good lucke notwithstandynge (for that alreadie he had escaped suche iii hoat skirmishes of Fortune, whom he judged now to have drawen the thred of her spite to an ende), beholde! the alaram of the iiii assalte, more vyolent then any of the rest, and excedinge theim all in absolute argumentes of perentory perills. For the justice, not satysfyed of the morder, and harpinge still uppon the confession of him that first opened the presumpcion, sent hym in the garde of certeine officers to the Lord Momboyer, chiefe of the senat afore whom he had advowched (with new othe) the perticularyties of his former deposicion; wherupon was enjoyned eftesones a straite commandement to the justice to make a seconde searche in the house of Plaudina; who, if she were now more amazed then afore, and almost at point to yeld to dispair, it is to be thought pore Cornelio had no lesse cause of disquiet: for that, yeldinge himself alreadie dyscovered by his enemies, he judged the new broyle and clattering of rostye halbardes, to be messengers sente by the judge to apprehende him. Wherein his opinion was the rather confirmed; for that, assone as they were within the house, and afore the good man colde make himselfe readie to meete theim, they made no staie till they came to the chamber of the selly hous-dove in the chymney; wher fynding by evill happ a case with dagges, and other weapons of suspicion, brought thether by the ii servantes sleping in their owne misfortune, rather wearye with their longe jorneye then likely to commit a morder, they condemned theim by and by as guiltie of the fact. Wherwyth, omittinge no rigour of their office, they coppled the ii innocentes together in a scarffe of hemp. Wherin, as the goodman made hast to come to the reskew of his men, he was encountred by the

DISCOURSE V

way by certeine sergeants or crymynall officers; who, arresting him as prysoner on the behalfe of the kinge, ledd hym captyffe to the castell amongest the rest of his miserable servantes. Neyther colde hee bee suffred to commence matter for his own justifycacion, nor have indifferencie in excusing th' innocency of his men; such was the rage of these rakehells and officers of hel, who are commonly more prest to oppresse innocencie by vyolence then readie to doo justice sincerelie, accordynge to theyr othe and dutie.

Here, although Fortune began to change complexion, and moderate somwhat her angrye clymat towardes our sorowful lovers, by lockyng the husband wyth the moste of his servantes in close pryson, yet this happie torne of her wheele unloked for, seamed such a myst to the mind of Cornelio, that he was not hable to descerne that which his hart dyd dyvyne, nor beleve that fortune, upon such a soddaine, cold convert her angrie and wrathful humor into suche spedie compassion. Neyther cold the conceites of his doubtfull harte geve other judgement, then that the laste retire and departure of the guarde was rather a vision or dreame then a thing of effect. Such bee the ordynary allaroms appointed to quarrell with the doubtfull mynd; who, in an extremetie, is alwaies more apt to ymagyn the worst then hable to beleve, or geve credyt to, thinges that bee true. And when daunger and peril occupie the place, confydence is often torned into feare; and feare is of such force that it doth not only denie us to use councel in our evill, but makes us (for the moste part) to refuse the thinge that shoulde be our most savegarde. Wherein the poore Cornelio seamed no lesse passioned then afore, and assailed rather with doble dispair then hable to admit any simple proffer of hope; in such sorte as, devisinge to what to vowe himselfe, he put his speciall and chiefe confidence at laste in his praiers to the greate God; whom he desyered above all thinges, with teares, to defend his deare Plaudina from any note of infamie or shame by his meanes; and for himselfe, if his glasse were now run out, and the dome of his extreme destynies colde bee no longer deferred, that at the leaste hee would, by the hand of some aungell and other vertue of great miracle, bestow him in

The doubtefull mynd is rather apt to beleve the worste then credyt thinges that bee true.

some soile unknowen, afore the fates had ful power to execute the uttermost of their rigorous commission; protesting, notwithstandinge, that if he might bee despensed withall for this one falt, never to be founde so forgetfull of himselfe hereafter, if God and nature weere content to seele him an assurance of the race and yeres of Nestor. Plaudina, on th'other syde, seamed indyffrentlye passioned betwene dissembled sorow and assured gladnes, a forced grudge and an unfained joye; grevinge in the one, for th'imprisonement of her husband, whose innocencye shee knew dyd warrant his delyverie, and rejoysinge in the other, for that, contrary to her expectacion, Fortune had made the way open, and geven her consent for the consommacion of the banquet with her languishinge lover; whose safe and happie perservacion seamed more to delite her thenne the remembrance of the hard and wrongful ymprisonement of her husband greved her. Neyther was she so carefull to redeme him from captivitye as readie wyth great devocion to geve Love and Fortune their peculyar thankes: the one, for that, in preserving his champions from the malice of daunger and marke of open shame, he seamed to restore the felde, and assist theim with saccour, whenne they dispaired most of consolacion; the other, for that, contrary to her nature and custume, she had torned their manifold afflictions into a pleasure more precious and acceptable then al the desasters of the whole worlde seamed grevous or hurtfull. In which passion of joye shee mounted into the chamber of Jacke of the clockhouse; who, resembling a red heyring dryed in the smoake agaynst the beginning of the next Lent, attended her comming wyth no lesse devocion then the Jews expect their Messias. And, albeit, the approch of present joye, forcinge some teares in remembrance of the feare passed, seamed for the time to take away the use and libertie of her tongue, yet she cut of the trance of that pleasant sorowe, without th'assistance of any speciall countercharme other then that whych proceded of a vehement desyer to behold and speake wyth her frende in the chymney. Wherfore, after she had dryed and drained the wet humor of her waterie eyes, and dismissed all argumentes of former dule, she retired

DISCOURSE V

DISCOURSE V

to her auncient complexion of joy, and calling with a smyling voice to him in the topp of the rooffe, willed him to discend hardly from his dark troane and theatrie of hell: 'wher' (sayth she) 'if God had not devised the meane of your delyverie, and seamed willing that you shold receive the due guerdon of your loyaltie, in consenting to commit my husband to prison, you had stil remeined there, norished with the vapour of the moone, longer then eyther I wold have wished or had bene necessarie for your health.' Here, albeit Cornelio was sufficiently perswaded of the voice of his ladie, and that he knew all the house to be voyed of suspicion or cause of further daunger, yet the remembrance of his perill passed presented such a feare to fall eftsones into the like perplection, that hee neyther beleved that which hee harde, nor durst forsake his habytacion on highe, til he was sommoned the second tyme by his Plaudina; who, by the help of her woman, reared a lather to the top of the loft where the grymy roode stode; who, beinge discended and in the presence of his ladie, seamed no lesse amased then those desolate or, rather, dronken creatures, who, wandring the night by unknowen waies, do thinke theimselves guided by the vision of some ill spirit. And the wanton ladie, on th'other syde, seing the ghastlie astonishement of her frende, not much unlike in complexion to the chymney swepers cominge out of the yle of Bergamasqua, cold not so moderat her present gladnes, but, burstinge into a soddaine laughter, shee seamed to crucifye the remembrance of the tragedie passed wythe the singler contentment she toke in beholdinge her Cornelio, dyed (as it were) in the smotheringe tanfat of hyddeous collours. And, albeit, (you lovers) who, for a simple glee and respect of favor of your ladies, have earste bene sprinkled with the water of semblable affliction, and (after getting th'upper hand of your fortune) possesse the presence of your dames in such oglye and deformed attire, canne best judge of the present case of Cornelio: I meane whether hee hadde more cause of shame then astonishmente, juste anger against hys fortune, or reason to exclaime his mishappe, chieflie for that he found himself so brave a companion in the lothsom badge or lyverye of the chymneye;

and whether he had so greate courage to communicate wyth his Plaudina, resembling the blacke knight or feryman of Zenoloz, as he showed hymselfe valyant in th' attempte of an enterpryse of so great adventure. Yet th' authorytie of my historye advoucheth thus farre of his doinges at that tyme, that, notwithstandinge the malice and diversitie of all his mishapps, with the perfumed figure and greeselie show of himselfe, he neyther loste corage to demaunde the due meede and hyer of his daungerous traveile, nor forgat to do sacrafise to his Fortune for the retorn of her frendshippe; affirminge there that they dyd her wronge that christenned her by the name of cruell, and suche no lesse abused her that tearmed her by the title of an unrightuous or rigorous judge, consideringe she doth but justice sometime to checke or chasten our offences, and we no reason to pleade for our selves but by appelacion to the pryviledge of her favor. 'Neyther is she cruell for ever, nor so maliciouslye bente in the begynning, but shee is hable and will use moderacion in her angrie moode, and restore us in the end to treble contentacion. And likewise' (sayth hee) 'as the poore travellour in a strange contrey, havynge once passed diverse light perills and daungers of no great ymportaunce, is not only made stronger to encounter greater inconveniences, but also restored to a mervelous contentment and quiet of minde, when, without daunger, hee may enjoye his rest, and record his perills paste. Even so Fortune this night hathe geven us an experience of diverse desasters, bothe to use her advertisemente as a speciall armour to resyste th' assaltes of semblable accidents hereafter, and also to confirme our affections with a stronger or undoubted unytie; makinge the pleasures of our love of greater price and moment after so sharp stormes of raging tempestes. And what is hee that is worthie to taste of the delites and pleasures of the worlde, that is not hable to disgeste one simple pill of bitter confection. Neyther dothe hope dekaie but with the ende of life; and the vertue of a most true and invincible loyaltie is never frustrate nor voyed of his rewarde. And tochinge the stormes paste, my deare Plaudina,' sayth he, 'like as it is a chiefe cousolacion to a man in calamytie to knowe his mis-

DISCOURSE V

happ, so there is also a speciall compfort that followeth the remembrance of the evills whiche wee have alredie suffred, and a treble contentmente beinge permitted to recorde theim wythout daunger. And hee that is desierous to bee crowned with the garland and glorie of victorie, must not feare the malice of perill nor hazarde of lyfe; for who contemneth death, escapeth his malice; but such as feare and flee from hym, do often fal into his daunger. Neither is there lesse fame in the valyant adventure then in the fortunat victorie. And, for my parte, if my lyfe had ended in th' assalte of any of these distresses, the same had not exceded a simple oblation of my dutie towardes you; whiche also had followed wyth no lesse expedicion then I had great desyer to geve you so unfayned a shewe of my service, if in the verye act had not appeared a manifest derogacion and cause of infamie to your honor.' Wherwith meaninge yet to prolonge his discourse, hee was interupted with the replie of Plaudina; who, more desyerous to taste of the pleasures to come then willinge eftsones to prefer a second view of the mischieves passed, wished hym to dismisse the remembraunce of their former perils, and seame more willyng to embrace the gyfte of present time. 'For there is not so greate consolacion in the recorde of our miserie past, as cause of worthie annoye, if we seame unthankefull to the newe offer or gyfte of oure fortune. And albeit,' sayth she, some what smylinge, 'that your boldnes was more then deserved praise, yet your felicitye, you see, hath defended you from perill; and the rashnes of the valyaunt is often times tourned into an encrese of his glorye, with double contentment not loked for.' Wherwith embracinge her Cornelio, she helped to disfornishe hym of his loathsom attire. And, after he had purifyed his grymye bodye in ij or iij baines, made for the purpose by the chambriere whilest they were in discourse, they entred together the lystes in a faire feelde bed readye dressed, armed onely with naked weapons: where it is no lesse harde for the ignoraunt to judge their encounters, then impossible for th' absent to witnes who wan the price of the battayle. Onelye I leave the sentence of them both to the resolucion of you (my lordes) that have or wolde bee speciall stiklors in such a combat.

But thus muche I maye ymagine without offence, that the innocent hornsbye, in the castell founde not so muche pleasure in his prison, as Cornelio toke delite, beinge the lieutenant of his bedd, in dauncinge the maried mans rounde without other musicke then the instrument of his wyfe. Which both, triumphynge indiffyrentlye over the infortunat and miserable birde in the cage, and ratinge the pleasures of the rest of that nighte, with an advauntage of vij or viij dayes more, at what interest they thought goode, forgat not to dob hym that was absent, Knighte of the forqued order of Vulcan. And albeit Fortune shewed heare a marvellous partialitie and conninge in the conveigh of this buysines, (I meane to advaunce the attempte of the lover, by the oppression and unjust captivitie of the innocent husbande) yet was not her favor to cleare, but there appeared a threatenyng sommonce of spedie change; for that the goodman beinge justifyed with in vj or vij dayes tryall, was redemed from prison. Whose delyverie was not so acceptable to himself as displeasant to his ij corrivals: whereof the one, feedyng hym with the revercion and leavynge of another man, gave hym onely the possession of a shapp and bodye of a woman wythout a hart; and the other, wearye or cloyed with the toile of one kinde of exercise, or not hable any longer to mainteine the skirmishe without freshe supplies, or fearynge, peradventure, the torne of his Fortune (who never yeldes us pleasure without a sharp repentaunce in the ende, if we prevent not her dome by discrecion) was as willynge to resigne the forte as at the first he seamed desyerous to enter the breache. Wheruppon, resolvynge upon an other time for the further consommacion and complot of their felicitie, they departed, not without signes of secret sorowe, appearynge by the teares standing in their eyes—the one to her husbande (who, wearynge by ignorance a forqued garland, made of the leaves of the tree wherof an other had coolled and cropped the frute, was content with that he founde, and rejoysed in his happy encounter); the other, not without great daunger, retired to Mantua: where, takynge more pleasure in the repeticion of his perils passed then desyrous (without better advise) to

DISCOURSE V

reitterate, or undertake againe, the lyke adventure, he discoursed the whole to his frende Delio; who for his parte, rejoysynge more in the saffe retorne of his frende then commending his wisdom in th'attempt of so rashe and perillous an enterprise, exclaimed against the detestable rage and furye of love: which, as al antiquities do affirme to be of more force, and infection, then al the ruberbe of Alexandria or Antycyria is eyther hable to heale or delaie the least furie of so uncurable a poyson; so the familiar experience of this age, justifiyng the protestacion of former time, doth yeld us such diversities of examples, touching the raging disposition of that frantike humour, that we ought not only to shon the aire of such a pestilent plage (no les then the mariner that goth a loofe, and giveth place to, the harde rockes in the daungerous occean), but also to stande so sewerlye upon our guarde, that we seame not once to lysten to th'intisynge sommance, or lewer, of so execrable corrupcion: who, once takynge possession of the sensible partes within us, besides that he ceasseth not to interrupte our quiett wyth continuall torment and passion, stretcheth yet his power so farr, that he bringes us in case, not only to commit our lyves to manifest perils, forgett the dutye of our conscience, with breache of the commaundement of God, but also (to satisfye the appetit of wanton lubricitie) he makes us corrupt the puritie of the soule with the spott of abhominable adulterye, a syn most apte of all other to incense the vengeance of God against us. Whereof we have sewer prooff in the destruction of Sodom and Gomorra, wyth diverse other contreys and common welthes whiche he hath plaged and brought to ruyne for the onely lycencious lyvyng of the people.

# DISCOURSE VI

THE VILLENNIE of an ABBOT in seking to seduce a mayde by force, and her vertue in defendyng her honor against him and his companyons of traison.

# GEFFRAIE FENTON'S

## DISCOURSE VI

### THE ARGUMENT

Like as all ages, from the firste foundacion of the primytive churche, are voide of recorde or remembrance of so greate diversitie in religion as the wickednes of our presente time doth present unto us, so th' oppynions at this daye are not so differente one from an other as th' abuse of the Babylonian or dyabolicall secte of Rome appeares so plainely in their detestable trade of livinge, that their owne villanie and frutes of corruption discovereth to the dymmest eyes that be, howe farr they are from the pathe of sincere and true doctrine; and yet, marching unworthelie amongeste the troope of the faithful, are not ashamed to arrogatt unto theim selves the title of th' anoynted of the Lorde, wyth protestacion that they only beare the badge of true Christianytie. Wherin, albeit it agreeth not with the taske I have taken in hande eyther to argewe or move question—because bothe the one and the other belonges to the office of the theologian, or devine of learninge and authoritie—yet, seinge a daylye encrease of their disorder, wyth a slacke endevour of suche as (havinge authorytie to expose unto theym the rodd of reformacion) seame rather pertiall on their behalfe, then readie (accordinge to their dutie) to yelde due punishment to their detestable errour, I maye without offence bowlte out myne opynion touchinge their abhominable trade of lyfe, beinge confirmed chiefelie therein wyth infynite examples of lascivious exploites, and other inordinat trade of lyvinge, in the parsones of such as make semblable profession. And truly as we do but righte to yelde a dutifull reverence to such as be true prelates and pastours of the litle flocke dispersed thorow the worlde, together with a generall zeale to th' order of theim that bee called to the sacred sanctuarie; evenso we commit offence, in myne opinion, in believinge that there is anye honor or commendacion at all due to theim whose lives expose more argumentes and proves of infamie then the moste vile and swearinge ruffyan that ever did service to th' impudente curti-

san of Rome. Neither is it a seamlye honor or ornamente for the Church of God to see a prelatte, puffed upp with vanitie, jettinge up and downe the streetes uppon his footeclothe, attended upon as a satrapas with a traine of dashbucklers or squaringe tospottes, and hym selfe pinked and razed in th' attire of a yonge bridegrome; with hys heare curled by art, fallinge in lockes, as it were by appointment, uppon his forheade, with more curyositie then an olde ydoll or ymage of Venus; perfuming the streetes with the smell of muske and amber, whiche he hath conyngely inclosed in the seames of his garmentes. Besides what example of vertue is it, to see one of our reverend religious fathers and governours of coventes, more geven to courte the dames with requestes of sensualitie, then to torne over the leaves of the New Testament, or other sacred institucions left unto us by Christe and his disciples; and emploie more studie in devise to seduce and subborne their neighbors wives and doughters, then to visit their diocesse and defende the sely shepe against the malice of the raveninge wolfe seking to devoure the fewe that be left? Is he worthy to be admitted to feede the flocke, or beare the title of Christes shepherd, that lyves in more adultery, fornycation and dronkenes, then he that makes an only profession of suche evil all the daies of his life? Or how is he hable to reclaime such as be out of the waye to salvacion that detesteth the scripture, delites in wickednes, and preferres absolute examples of the most perentory synne that can bee? Whereof th' Ytalyan Bandell hath drawen a most true and lyvelye pattorne in the person of a Neapolitaine abbott; whiche I have accompted of necessitie to prefer amongest my volume of discourses, as well to the confucion of hym selfe and such as resemble him in condicion, as to geve worthie glorie to the vertue of a pure virgyn who had her honor in such reputacion, that she sought rather to end her daies in the defence of her chastetie thenne to commit the use of her bodie to the fleshly will of an abbot, more full of villanie thenne perticipatinge with th' office and dutie of a true christian.

A discripcion of Naples according to the cronicles of Tuskan.

LL men, whose experience by travaile is a wytnes of the singularities of Italye and Spaine, are of opinion I am sewer, that Naples is one of the most riche, pleasante, and populus cities in Europe; bothe for the beautie and fartilitie of the countreye rounde aboute, the magnifical plat and scituacion of the towne, prospectinge with open casementes uppon the heyghte of the highe sea Tyrenum, and also the warlyke garrison of gentlemen of al contreis, lyenge there for the defence of the frontiers, with the civill disposicion of the people inhabitynge the sayde paradise. There maye you see a plaine and pleasant champaine, yeldynge a wonderfull solace, wyth her delicate aire breathing uppon suche as use the feildes for wholesome recreation, and noresheth besides all chases of delite necessarie for th'exercise of nobilitie. And he that wysheth to be pryvie to the pleasure of solitarie places, maye see there the wonderfull arts and industrie of nature, declared in the conveigh of litle hilles or pendells of the earthe, hangynge (as it were) by a frame of geometrye, beawtified on all partes, with an infinitie of orenges, lemons, and other trees odiferous, yeldynge a comoditie and pleasure peculiar to the towne, and generall benefitt to the whole countrey, and straungers passynge that waye, as well by th'intisinge savour of that trees, as sugred taste of the frute. The bottoms of which deliteful groves do discover certeine valleis, no lesse ryche in fruteful graftes and plantes of straung kindes, then the champion, yeldynge a plentiful increase of corne of al sortes; where the meadowe, also, cladd with his grene garmente at al tymes of the yere, is honge continuallie with a tapestrie of all coolors of hearbes and flowers, with other liverie of dame Flora; who assystes this heavenly glee in the valleys, with the joystes of sondrie cleare springes, yeldynge at all tymes of the daye a temperat dewe, to take awaie the vehement heate of the son; in suche sorte as the straungers passinge by, imparting

Diverse Englishe gentlemen enterteined there at this daye.

of the ayre and wholsomnes of the place by the breathe of a milde zephir, are drawen thether by delite, and forced to repose and refreshe their weary bodyes for a tyme with the solace, whereof those places yelde an indifferent plentie to al men. Besides, he that is desierous to be pertaker of the merveiles of nature, hidden in th' intralles of the earthe, let hym take a boate and visit the ylandes; where, amongest the wonders that Pozzollo bringes furthe, he shall see the hott poddells, from whence distille the baines, so necessarie for the health of man, with the pubbling-troughe or cave of Sibilla, by which, as the poetes fayne, Eneas made his entrey in discendyng into hell to speake with his father. There apperes also a remembrance of th' artificial laborynth of Dedalus, with the sumpteous palleys of the Romaine Lucullus; whose lodgyngs, with so many crooked turnings and windinges every waye, chapells, and places of solitarie resorte, excedyng (accordynge to the poetes) the computation of man, were swallowed in a momente in the devowrynge throate of Tyrenum, by a soddaine trembling or shakyng of the earth, commonly calied an earthequake. Finally, he shalbe there presented, with the secret and most sure lodgings, builded by nature in the belly of the harde rockes, with other wonders in suche infinite nomber, that onely that place yeldes pleasure sufficient to fede the eye and mynde of man, with more delite then the whole remainder of Europe is hable to furnish. Wherein, I am chiefely moved to note you a particular discription of this paradise, to th' end that, as the places of solemne and solitary regarde do commonly mortefie in men all occasions of wanton exercise, so the planet that governeth those plattes of earthly pleasure, pricking forward our effeminate dispocision, sturreth up the humor of lascivius luste, with an inclinacion more readie to performe the fraile suggestion of the flesh, then provide for the health of the devyne parte of the mynde, which is the sowle. Neyther is our present age so plentiful of vertue or vertuouse effectes but the view of our auncestors lives past gives us sufficient cause to blushe and be ashamed, in that we are founde so weake in th' ymytacion of their exploites and exercises of vertue. Wherin, besides an infinitie of examples procedyng

DISCOURSE VI

of the wickednes of our time, I maye be bolde to confirme myne opinion with a familiar experience of an abbot of Naples; whose younge discrecion, equall to the grenes of his yeres, made hym no lesse insufficient to govern the state of his vocation, then unable everye waye to discharge th' offyce wherein he was invested by othe and habitt of religion. For havyng also the consente of noble race (whereof he was discended) to favor the wilfull appetites of his unbridled youthe, he toke more delite to assyste the exercises of nobilitie (I meane in makynge one at all manner of daunses, masques, momeries, dressed for the honour of ladies with covered faces, and other recreations of pleasure, convenient onely for the courtyer) then to sitt in the chapter-house uppon reformations of hys monkes, or to ymploye any parte of hys tyme in the studie of the sacred volumes of the churche. He was also admitted a necessarye compagnion to some of the governours and capteines there, for that he kepte an ordynarye table, and free diot for gentlemen; beynge a thynge most acceptable to the Spanyarde, who at hoame kepeth hym within the compasse of thyn and sober chere, and abrode is nothynge inferiour to the devourynge Almayne, resemblynge by that meanes the sparynge order of the nigardes of olde tyme, in their drye and hungrye banquettes. And to the sinne of thys excesses in delicate fare, he added an offence no lesse hainous and moste unseamely for any of his callynge, devidynge the daye into howers, and howers into ymitacion of pleasures. Some tyme he was sene in the streetes in th' attire of a galland or younge courtiour. Some tyme he visited the hauntes and assemblies of ladies, courtyng suche of theym as he founde to give moste eare to his ydle talke; neyther respectyng the opynion that passed of his lightnes, touchynge the violacion of the hollye order of hys profession, nor the dishonor he dyd to the house from whence he discended, but gloried rather in that he colde so artificiallye performe the partes of a Philantos, or flatteryng lover, then, in revelyng the misteries of the scrypture, to seame to ymitate the true simplicitie of lyfe of hys vertuous predecessours in that place. Whereuppon followed ymediatly a declaracion of the vile frute of so vicius a lyfe. For as

Monsieur le Moyne passed one daye in great braverye uppon hys footeclothe thorowe the fayrest streete of Naples, exposyng a riche showe by reason of the glee of the gold smithes shoppes, he glaunced, by chaunce, uppon one of the faireste women (as he thoughte) harbored at that tyme within the walles. And followynge the pursute of her beautye, wyth a gredye gase of hys eye, maugre hys harte, he was forced to a soddayne staye ryghte over agaynste the place where shee was. Whyche tyme of abode, his eyes forgat not to imploie in takyng large measure and viewe of her proporcion every waie; makinge such reaporte to the harte and rest of the interiour partes that in one momente he became assailed with that wherin he was ignoraunt for experience, and lesse assisted with necessarie resistaunce; feelyng within him a hoat warre betwene the sencesible partes of reason, and sensuall provocation of the flesh, with a presente captivitie of his auncient quiet by the common enemie of the ease of man, which we call properly the passion of love; who, at this first encounter, rampired hymselfe so strongely within the inward partes of this younge abbott that he onelye governed his thoughtes, and disposed his doinges altogether by his discretion; ceassinge not to flatter his fonde humour wyth instinctes of vaine conceits, til he broughte hym to the stage to play the last acte of the comedie, where he received the due guerdon of his follye, with open shame and rebuke of the multitude. And when tyme sommoned this religious fondlynge to departe from the viewe of his newe mistres, he seamed in no lesse paine then if there had bene presente incision made into his intrailes, to cut in sonder the stringes where upon hys harte is staide, or that (accordynge to the poetes) he felte the egle of Promotheus peckinge uppon his liver. The girle was the doughter of a goldsmith, no lesse deare to the father then extremelye beloved of her mother, both for her beauty and promptnes of wit, and, also, for that in her young yeres appeared suche argumentes and signes of vertue that she was noted the paragon and patorne of all degres of her tyme for womanly behaviour, and nothyng inferiour to the best touching the chast order and honest conveighe of her lyfe, wherewith she

Love a common enemy to the ease of man.

DISCOURSE VI

beautifyed the meane discente of her parentes, and lefte a rare example to the ladyes of greater callynge, who thinke their renowme sufficientlye confirmed by the height and honor of their house, without puttinge to the accion and effecte of vertue; which in dede, as it is the badge true nobilitie, so it hath also authoritie to make noble the meanest discent that is. And truly as the vaine woman exalteth her selfe, like to the birdes, whose naturall lightnes conveighe theim to the starres (I meane, takes pleasure in the abundance of her riches, preferreth the magnificencie of her house, ymagininge her beautie to be worthie to sytt in the highest theatrey of the world) so the wise woman is glorified only in the gifte of sincere and pure simplicitie, wyth a wonderfull care to kepe her name without spott, and the course of her life so uprighte that the malice of evill tounges maye have no power to enter, and muche lesse perce with any worthie slaunder. But nowe to our Gansaldo and amarous abbot, who, bathing in the lake of his follies, thought as greate ympossibilitie to retire or dismisse this firste alaram, or sommonce of love, as to comprehende all the water of th' occian within a litle urynall. Neyther wold he dispose hymself to trie the force of any resistance; but determined (at what price soever it wer) to ymparte his passion to the girle; which he ymagined would move in her a consent of reciprocall affection. Herein the opinion of the poet is justifyed, sayinge, that lovers reapose a certeintie in dreames and proclayme a sewer victorie of th' uncerteine object of their fancie. Like as this fonde abbot, being lymed with a simple looke or glaunce at unwares, doth promisse himselfe the conquest of the pray, against whom he hath as yet used neyther force nor pollicye, and much lesse dressed any ambushe. He forgat not every day in the weke to make his purmenado on horsebacke in the streete wher dwelt the saint to whom he had vowed such solemne devocion. Wherin for a more glorie of him selfe, and the rather to seduce the maide, hee appeared in severall attire and chaunge of horse, twise or thrise a day, not forgettinge in passing by the house of the goldsmith to take measure of the doare, glaunce upon the windowes, and perce with the draw-

ing regards of his eye thorow every crevise of the wal, to th' end hee myghte encounter a seconde viewe of her whose fyrst regard had ministred unto him the brothe of infection. And if fortune were content at any time to geve him a syght of her, whether it were at the doare or out of the window, or in other place which denied him favor or libertie to speake to her, I thinke he forgat not to expose arguments of his grefe, by the pitiful regards of his countenance, wanton torninge of the eye, and other messengers of his passion, arguing the torment he endewred for the desier he had to do her service. He understode at last, by secret inquisition, what churche her mother haunted for the performing of her prayers, and that her doughter was her only companion in these devocions; whither also hee directed his pilgrymage; and, dissymulinge with God, hee plaide th' ypocrite, in convertinge his regards from th' alter or place of levacion to beholde the bewtie of the goldsmithes daughter—the saint to whom his hart yelded most honor; making of the house of prayer the shop or forge to frame iniquitie; exceding in this respect the barbarouse abuse of the Etheniques Turkes and infidells, who geve more reverence to their mosques, wher God is blasepheimed and his Son abjured, then the Christians now a dayes to the temples and houses dedicated to the Lord to performe the ministracion of the sacraments, with open publicacion of the wil of our Saviour Christ; whom, wyth Saint Paule, we ought to pray for the subvercion of Babilon, and restauracion of the true Church, dispersed into divers corners of the world by the malice of the pope and his wicked disciples; wherof this abbot, being not the least in authoritie, was nothing inferiour to the most abhominable in al vices. Wherof he gave sufficiente proofe in two offences of equall detestacion; the one in seking to deflowre a mayde contrarye to the othe of hys religion, the other in abusinge the house of God, as a place of bawdye practise to performe th' effecte of hys cursed devise; beinge more devowte in courtinge the ladies of Naples thenne curious to reforme th' abuses of his ydle covente. But the girle, notinge th' inconstant order of prayer in our reverende father Gonsaldo, together wyth hys wanton regards, full of lasciveous desyer,

DISCOURSE VI

ymagined by and by wyth what yron the gentleman was shod, and to what sainct hee would gladlye offer his candell. Wherefore, thinkinge it noo breache of good manner to playe mock-hally-day wyth such a maister foole, gave hym skoape now and thenne to behold her at large; and to beat the hammer more depe into his head, would requite his amarous glaunce wyth a semblable glee, and sodaynly retire and vanish out of hys sight wyth an angry farewel, as though shee disdayned his wanton offer; wyth intente, notwithstandynge, to shonne hys voyce and place of presence no lesse then th' incounter of any venemus beaste, fearinge to reapose eyther credytt in hys honestie, or so much assurance in her owne pudicitie, as to open her eare to the charme of a frivolous lover, or who thinkes it no offence to take awaye the puritie of a mayde: whom wee maye compare to the red rose, desiered of every one, so longe as the morning dewe mainteineth hym in odyferous smell and pleasaunt coollor, but when the force and heate of the son hath mortyfied hys oryent hew, and converted his naturall freshnes into a withered leafe, the desier to have it dekaieth wyth the bewtie of the thynge. Evenso shee that hath once morgaged the flower of her virginitie, is not only despised of hym to whom shee hath bene so prodigal of that whych shee oughte to make a moste precious jewell, but also in common contempte wyth all men, what showe of dissembled curtesye soever they presente unto her. Wherof the mistres of Gonsaldo was nothing unmindfull, who, preferringe the honor and reputacion of chastetie, affore all the respecttes of the worlde, seing wythall that the blinde abbot persewed more and more hys amarous quest, prevented hys expedicion by making her a straunger to his presence, shonnynge all places of his repaire, and, to take awaye all occasions that myghte geve increase to his desyer, shee forbeare to visit the churches, onelesse it were at suche howers as they were voyde of other companie; and yet wyth suche regarde, that shee made (as it were) a privy searche in all the corners and quyers of the temple, to prevent his subteltie in dressinge some ambushe to invade her uppon a soddaine. And if by chaunce he saw her and saluted her in the streetes, shee crossed saile on the

other side, and closed her eyes as agaynst some hurtfull encownter, yelding hym no other countenance then she mighte have avowched to the most infydell in the uttermost Ilandes of Tartaria. Whych brought the sely freare into suche mortall perplexitie, that dispaire beganne to appeare, wyth th'approche of sondrye perentorie diseases, chiefly for that the hyer of his earnest love was retorned with sondry sorts of crueltye and disdaineful repulses; occupyinge his brayne with suche contrarietie of thoughtes, that he was voide of councell to what saint to vow himselfe, or upon what wood to make his arrowes; seinge he was neither hable to mortifye, nor use moderacion in, his passion, and muche lesse was assisted with any meane to communicate the greatnes of his greefe to her, whose beautie had made hym the slave of follie. Wherein, albeit he sawe a vanitie to use the office of a *Dariolleta*, or bawde—for that the vertue of the maide argued a detestation of suche embassadors, and to write to her appeared a great difficultie, for that she was alwayes in the presence of her mother, who, usinge the vertue of her doughter as a solace of her olde yeres, was no lesse carefull of her honestie then belonged to so precious a jewell —yet, feelynge a continuall agravation of desyer, wyth a flatterynge offer of love to rewarde hym in the ende with the praye of his purseute, he determined to suborne a shameles mesenger to bewraye his shameful intente; and therefore put his requeste upon tearmes in a letter of this effecte:—'Yf my destenies had don execution uppon my bodye when firste they broughte me to the viewe of your beautie, I had not ben a presente experience of your crueltye, nor you th'occasion of my unworthie torment. For if death by nature had prevented the begynnynge of my love, I had ben free from the force of passion, discharged of all mortall greefe, and you dispensed withal from the imputation and cause of a double ill: the one to abuse the vertue of your selfe and do wronge to the renowme of al women by preferring effectes of rigour; the other in disdaynynge the service of him, whose life and death payseth indifferently in the ballaunce of your goodwill; dissemblynge also not to see the circunstaunce of my love, to drive me to desperacion, and at the point to use

The abbot writeth to his mistres.

DISCOURSE VI

unnaturall force againste myselfe. Howe often, alas! have I made you privye to th'inwarde affection of my mynde, by the outwarde regardes and glaunces of my exterior partes! Howe often have you acknowledged the same by argument of semblable glee, and immediatly denied the whole by a soddaine showe of angrie complexion; eyther disdayning utterly th'offer of my service, as one unworthie to enjoye the preferment of your favor, or dalyenge wyth my earnest sute, to geve increase to my passion! I have often bene upon the waye to disclose unto you by mouth the thinge wherin your hart hath alreadie geven judgement of my meaning, albeit the desier not to offende you any waye hath staide th'expedicion of my intent, suspendyng my grefe till the greatnes of the same hath forced a presente vent, with this simple requeste:—that as fearinge to ymparte the full of so great a matter to so uncerteine a messenger as a pece of paper, so it may please you to geve me credit of my conference, wher only ourselves may be witnesses of that whych I have to discover and am no longer hable to conceile. Wherin, if there be any bonde of consideracion in great ladyes, on the behalfe of the offer of their inferiours, ymagin how justly I deserve well of you; and wyth what reason you oughte to passe a graunte of so small a favor to hym who is no lesse hable (as you know) to procure your advauncement wyth what porcion of wealthe your selfe shall thinke good, then readye to performe all such thinges as you shall but ymagine and wishe to be don. Wherof I sende you a confirmacion herewith, sealed with the othe of my religion, and with protestacion of the faythe and life of your moste loyall and desolate servante, GONSALDO.'

He had no soner written this letter, but he was in mynde eftsones to commit it into morsells, or to make it a sacrafice to the fyer, dispairing belike of the successe, till at laste the blinde guide and fyrst author of his follie, reprehendinge his want of corage, renforced hym to a forwardnes, perswading hym that the beginning was good, and argued a sequeile of contentacion. 'The rather,' saieth he, 'for that the tender yeres, wyth small discrecion, preferreth an ignor-

Love.

ance in the girle of your meaning. And seing accesse and conference be denied, the nexte pollicie is, to use th' advantage of writinge, whyche declareth th' effect of that whyche is painted in the outwarde regardes of the face. The wordes of your letter may also importe such a charme, that her present rigour may be converted into spedie compassion; for as there is conning in enchauntyng, so the misterie can not be wrought without the assistaunce of words.' Which foolishe suggestion restored the abbot to a hope. And makyng conscience to commit the conveigh to the creditt of anye of his covent, for that he doubted their wisdome in performinge so secret an embassage, used th' expedicion by one of the vallettes of his chamber; whom, after he had put in remembraunce, of th' auncient favors he had used on his behalfe, and howe much he reaposed for hymselfe in the assurance of his fidelitie, he said he was nowe to imploye his faythe and diligence in a busynes of no lesse value then the price of his life. 'Wherin,' sayeth he, 'albeit thou maiest conster some part of my meaning by the circumstaunce of the late chaunge and alteracion thou haste noted in me, judgyng, peradventure, the same to procede of some amarous humour, yet, althoughe I consente and make good the conceite of thy fancie in that surmise, thow, nor all the devinours of the worlde, can name her, who (as thou seest) hath made me the slave of her beautie. This is the secret wherin I am to make a last experience of thy indevour and wisedome; to make a presente of theis letters to her, who hath not yet vouchesaffed to lende me the use of one simple regarde of favor to qualifye the heate of my burnynge martyrdom.' Wherewith he told him the name of his mistres, the streete and signe wher her father dwelte, with straite com maundement in the ende not to omitt any moment or offer of time that might seame to further the execution of his charge. The vallet, glad to have so good a meane to make declaration of his loyal zeale towardes his maister, admitted the enterpryse, and gave hym assurance of his diligence, willyng him in the meane while not to loase corage. 'For that,' saith he, 'there is no fortresse so wel defended, but at length it is rendred by composicion, or won by assaulte.'

DISCOURSE VI

Wherewith the abbot departed to his chamber, flatteringe himselfe with the promisse of his man, who, desirous to relive the distresse of his maister, added such diligence to the dispache of his commission that the nexte daie he founde the meanes to accoste Parolyna, occupyed al alon in her meditacions in the churche; where, presenting himself afore her with more assurance then the passioned abbot, gave her the reverence of his countrey, and desiered her not to dismay, if, upon so small acquaintance, he discharged so boldlye the parte of a familiar messenger. 'Wherein,' sayeth he, 'if there be offence, I preferr (good madam) for my excuse my lord and maister.' Upon whose behalfe, he craved so muche favour as to reade his letter; which, after he had kissed wit great humilitye, offred to the chaste mayde: who, knowyng the messenger, for that she had seen hym often follow the traine of Gonsaldo, gave judgement also of the cause of his commynge. Wherefore she did not only refuse it; but also, with certeine tearmes of reproche, retourned hym with an answer contrarie to th' expectation of hym selfe and contentment of hym that sent hym. 'What,' sayeth she, 'doth your maister accompte me of such simplicitie, that I have not longe since discerned th' intent of his follie? Doth he thinke that I am any other then one that settes as deare a price of mine honor as the best ladye in Italy? Or is he of opinion that the respect of his authoritie, or greatnes in degree, can force me the rather to a remorce on the behalf of his wicked meaning? No! no! tel him I have neither to do with hym, and lesse cause to accepte his letters. Neyther oughte he to addresse such embassages to me; who can, nor will not, be thankefull to any in love, but such as my parentes shall give me in lawful mariage. Is this his masque of holynes, to cover so greate a villanie under the habit or shroude of simplicitie? What argument of vertue is this in him, whose office is to prescribe principles of honest lyfe? Can he discharge the othe of his religion in seking to corrupt the puritie of virgins and expose an example of the greatest villanie that is? Let hym besiege the forte that is as gladde to yelde as he readie to sammon; and bestowe his charmes and letters uppon those,

whose regarde and care of honor is equall to the malice of his meaning. And, for your part, let it suffice you that I pardon your first follie; and ceasse hensfurthe to procede any further, least you be payde with the monie ordeyned to discharge the hyer of suche messengers.' Wherewith she flonge oute of the churche, and, not without some passion of juste anger, repaired to her fathers house, not ympartynge anye parte of th'accident to any one of her parentes, trustynge that as her desier and intente was to live in the trade of an honest woman, so God woulde assiste her vertuous respecte, and defende her chastetie agaynst the malice of the wycked. She douted to discover the case to her mother, for feare some slaunder woulde have followed: neyther durste she imparte it to th'olde man, leaste in complainynge of the wronge, his povertie hadde beene founde to weake to contende agaynste th'authoritie of th'abbot, and by that meanes to have beene worse delte withall then eyther he deserved or she desiered; but leaving an example to al women, to use like modestie in semblable distresses, shee committed her selfe and cause to the protection of the heavens. By this time the valiant messenger of Gonsaldo was retorned to his maister, communicatinge not onelye the perticularities of his aunswere, the disdaine she showed to his letters, and small accompte she seamed to make of the offer of his good wil, but also perswaded to correct the humour of his appetite, and dismisse the remembrance of her beautie, bestowinge his affection uppon some such as hathe more discrecion to yelde hym consideracion, then the folish doughter of a simple artisan. Which reaport, albeit brought an increase of doble passion to the martiredom of the poore abbot: bothe for that the termes of her aunswere argued an agravacion of her creweltie, and absolute dispaire hereafter to enjoy the benefit of her good wil. Yet he had the gift to dissimule th'inward panges of his grefe with a wonderfull patience, converting his humour of fretting mallencolie into tearmes of sorowful exclamacion, in this sorte:—'Ah!' saith he, 'I see wel thou arte ignorant in the forces of love, who is not easely suplanted after he hath once conquered the rampier of the harte. Neyther arte

Th'exclamacion of the abbot.

DISCOURSE VI

thou privie to the operacion of his pilles; who, differynge from the nature of other passions, assailynge the mynde of man, doe make us desyer that we can not gett, and love the thynges whiche hate us mortallye. And is not this a sufficient experience of the perversitie of women, seinge the more I indevour to preferr my service to my cruell Parolyna, the lesse accompte she makes of myne offer; and the more I languishe in desyer, the greater pleasure takes she in my martiredome; that I wishe, alas, that some oyle of holye thombe, mighte presently close mine eyes againste the lighte of this world, or els the vertue of some happie enchauntment, distillinge from the arbour and pot of som Elysea, mighte with spede remove the vaile of her rigour, and sturr up an humor of compassion to the reliefe of my painefull tormente. I see thy advise is justified every waye by reason, and when I dispose my selfe to followe thy councel, I feele within me (I know not what) which forceth my wil wyth constrainte to purseue the sommance of mine appetite, in suche sorte that the voice whiche uttered the repulse hath also pronounced the fatall sentence of my lyfe.' Wherin he had yet proceded, but that the panges of inwarde sorowe, compellynge the conduites of waterye humours to discover theim selves, forced a vente at his eyes in greate abundance of teares; whiche, drownynge the wordes of furder discourse in his mouth, moved his vallet also to equal dolor; who, notwithstandinge, preferred suche consolacion to his maister as sorowe woulde give hym leave to utter, with a franke offer to pawne his lyfe, with the rest of his worldlye porcion, to redeme the quiete of the abbott, and put hym in possession of her whome he accompted the sufferayne *cataplame* for his mortall disease. Wherewith he conforted eftesones the selye Gonsaldo; who, tellynge hym that after he had gott the consent of convenient tyme and oportunitie, he woulde somon hym to an effect of his promisse, dismissinge therewith his faithfull servant, and retirynge hymselfe to a simple comforte in this laste resolucion, for certeine dayes forbeare to visit the streetes, churches, or other places, where afore he was wonte to make his offerynges and purmenadoes; thinkynge in shonnyng the places of her repaire

and presence, he shoulde at laste force a forgetfulnes of her beautie. Wherein, notwithstandynge, he seamed to sprinkle water uppon hoate cinders, and brought more oyle to his matche: and all hys traveile therin sturred upp a freshe supplie of drawing baites, movinge an encrease of desyer, wyth augmentacion of his follie, whiche after he assaide to putt in execution. For the more he wente aboute to roote oute the remembrance of her beautye, the more suerly dyd love imprinte her picture in the bottome of his harte, with provocation not to give over the queste, but procede in the pursute of so pleasant a praye. In the daye the whole cloisture or circute of his abbaye cold skarcelye comprehende the sondrie ymaginations of hys braine: and his bed in the nighte presented hym wyth as muche reste as he that is bounde to treade continually the laborinth of endles toile. Wherin, ravinge thus in a passion of contrarietye of thoughtes, he accused hym selfe of cowardnes, for that the offer of so fainte a resistance, made hym retire his force, without gyvyng a more hoate assaulte to the place he ment to conquere. Wherewith, remembryng howe often he had harde, that women, what desyer so ever they have of theim selves to be thankeful to him that courts theim with the offer of love, yet take they, notwythstandynge, a singler pleasure to be assailed with importunities intermedled with a lytle constrainte or force, determined to imploye th'uttermost of his forces, and to paye hym selfe (maugre her resistaunce) the hier of his traveile wyth the moste precious jewell or treasure she had, at suche tyme as Fortune would gyve hym the favour of a convenient tyme and place to levy the last alaram; thynkynge, with the advantage of his pollicie, to compell her to treade the daunce which she never mente to practise if not in lawfull mariage. Here you maye note a familiar experience, that he that is in love, albeit he be blynde touchinge the knowledge of reason, yet, for the devise and execution of a follye, he hath more eyes then he whome the poetes affirme to have an hundreth lightes for the garde of Jupiter's cowe. For that this folishe Abbot, attendyng daiely an offer of commoditie and advantage of tyme to gyve a charge uppon his plainsante enemye at

DISCOURSE VI

unwares, used suche diligent watch to discrye her doinges, that he was made privie to the certeine hower wherein she was determined to attende upon her parentes to a fearme or graunge they had, not the moste parte of a league from the citye. In whiche oportunitye and offer of thankefull tyme, the blinde abbott reaposed a singler commoditie of his cause: for that, as you have harde, he determined to invade her wyth an ambushe at unwares, and so ravishe her out of the handes of her parentes by mayne strengthe. Whereunto he added an effecte, without regarde to the slaunder whiche attended so wicked an enterprise, or th' abuse he committed againste the order of his religion, and muche lesse the estimacion and honor of the house whereof he was discended.

Let this experience suffice to confute the opinion of the most of our lovers nowe a dayes; who, makynge a god of the ydoll of love, do not lett to give hym place amonge the moste perfect and heroicall vertues that are; affirmynge that all civilitye and curteys behaviour amongest men is derived of the discipline taughte in his skoole. Let the effect of his rage, I saye, declare his disposicion, and be the equall judge whether he be an indifferent evill or a pertiall vice. For, settynge your partycular affections aparte, I knowe you wyll confyrme myne opinion thus farre, that he whiche you cal love, and woulde that we honor hym wyth a tytle of a god, and give him a power more then humaine, is no other thinge then a brutall passion of the minde, derived of that parte whiche nature hath made comon to us with beastes, touchynge sensualytie; and he which laboreth in the disease of that follie is in no other degree then he that is possessed with the spirite of fransie and desperation. Looke in the seconde booke of the Kynges, and tell me what planett or spirite governed Amnon, the son of David; who, doatyng uppon the beautie of hys owne sister, made no consience to deflower her, and take awaye her chastetie. Whiche horrible acte woulde have procured terrour to the moste mortall enemye, both for the horror and detestacion of the syn, and also for the honor and reverence which all men oughte to gyve to the chastetie of a mayde. The prince of Sichem, being extremely enamored uppon the

beautie of the doughter of Jacob, dyd it suffice hym onely to love her, in honeste sorte? Did he staye hym selfe uppon your masqued and dyssymuled loyaltie? No! he dyd that which is judged tollerable to you al, and woulde be comon to moste of you, yf the rigour of the lawes had you not in awe, and preferred a feare of tormentes and worthy punishmentes—he ravished her by force. Whereuppon followed the ruyne of hym selfe and subversion of his people. For ende, yf there be any one amongest you that absteyneth from lyke violacion, I thinke (sewer) he is not stricken with th' extremetie of love, but that hys mynde hath tasted but a simple impression of that follie; seyng that he that is touched to the quycke, can hardly refraine from execution of like villainies. Amongest whom, notwithstandyng, I comprehende not th' integretie of them whose wills tende to do honor to the hollye bedd of mariage, without violacion (for that I am perswaded those affections procede frome above, and approved by God hym selfe) but I inveighe againste their unhoneste desiers, who respect nothing but the pleasure in that wherein Mars and Venus strove for the maisterie, at suche tyme as Vulcan discovered theyr naked bodies: which I can not terme so properly in our vulgare phrase, as the Frencheman includes in thies three wordes, *Le don d'amoureuse mercy;* the delite whereof dekayinge with the ende of th' act, maketh theym loath the thing wherin earste they tooke singler pleasure. Here you may see also a worthie example in this maister abbott, who, of a pastour and shepherde of the hearde, becomes a devowrer of the principal shepe in his flocke; and leavinge th' abit and attire of religion, is invested th' accotrementes of a villaine and dysposicion of a barbarus tyrant, that hathe neyther knowledge of God, nor feare of hys lawes. Wherein my conscience wolde serve me to use a further discourse, touchyng th' abuses in theis ypocrytes, savynge that (God be praysed!) our realme is happely purged of suche filth, and replenished with a plentifull crewe of th' undowted and faithfull mynisters of Godes worde. Neyther will I troble my historie with the sondry enormities and practises of hell whyche I noted in some religius houses in Fraunce, duryng my being there, because my theame at this tyme is

DISCOURSE VI

not to treate of th'abuses in their religion; neyther am I assisted with sufficient time; for that yf I should but abridge their disorders into a tenthe parte, the volume wold excede the bignes of the bible. Wherfore it shall suffice me to desier God in my praiers to remove the vaile of their darkenes in tyme, leaste their iniquitie procure hym to thonder lyke desolation uppon theym as he dyd uppon the children of Israell, when they forsoke hym, and bowed downe to ymages, whereof their owne handes were the carpenters.

And nowe to the sequeyle of Don Gonsaldo, who, harpynge onely uppon the strynge of hys damnable resolucion, imparted th'enterprice to his man, who (as you have harde) engaged his faithe to be the minister of hys wil in what respect he thoughte good to ymploye hym. And havynge eftesonnes preferred a repeticion of his promisse wyth an assurance by othe of th'uttermoste he was hable to do, th'abot told him that, within fewe dayes, his mistres went to performe a banquett with her father and mother oute of the citie. 'To whome,' sayeth he, 'seynge I have forgott no experience or importunitie whiche humanitie can devise, and seynge that in the enjoyinge of her beautie consistes the continuance or diminucion of my dayes, I am determyned to retire to the benefit of my laste refuge; whyche is to employe th'uttermoste of my forces, in usynge her by mayne encownter, uppon the waye betwene the towne and her fathers graunge in the countrey. Wherin, as thou hast alredye assured me of thy helpe by the othe and religion of thy faithe, so thou muste straine thyselfe to procure a further ayde of suche companions as thou accomptes necessarye to assiste th'expedicion; to th'ende that, when the matter shal be broughte to the tryall of force, we be not founde to weake in the dispatche of our entreprise; whyche, albeit maye importe unto the, and suche as thou shalte subborne for thy companions in this case, bothe a grudge of conscience, and feare to fall into the rigour of the lawes, yet thou arte not ignorante that th'authoritie of my profession is sufficient to dispense and absolve the synne, and my power hable to prevaile above th'extremitie of justice, in this, or any other respecte, of what importance soever it appeare. Neyther

will I sticke to deffraye the whole plate and treasure of my abbeye in defence of the quarrell agaynste the whole state and senate of Naples.' Wherwith he dismissed his manne, who with the pleasante platt of hys tounge, and prodigall promises of liberall hyer, was furnished ymediatlye of hys trayterus crewe to betraye th' innocent mayde; who, for her part, seing Gonsaldo hadde discontynued hys mosters in the strete, and hawnte to the churche where she is wonte to performe her devocion, thoughte he hadde also disclaymed the vehemencie of his passion, with intente no more to pursue her. Wherein as she accompted her selfe moste free from perill, so she founde an approche and offer of daunger whych affore she was not hable to ymagyn. For that th' abbott, beynge advertised by hys espiells of the daye and hower when the mayde shoulde go into the countrey, measured so ryghtlye his tyme with the momente of her departure, that, some one or two howers affore, he somoneth his conspiratours, and goeth oute of the towne, not in his frears weede or attire of his profession, but disguised in suche sorte, as he was not knowen to any but the ministers of his intente; whom he bestowed in ambushe, in an unknowen coverte, joynyng to the path by the whych the goldsmith and his doughter shold passe; who, thynkynge uppon nothynge but the plaisante regardes whyche the freshe and grene feeldes dydd yelde, and muche lesse ymagenynge anye secrett practise or villanie conspired againste them, entred with greate delite into the pathe of their misfortune. For neare unto Naples there ronneth a litle river, discendynge from certeine rockes, givynge necessarye moysture to the valley neare the towne, whiche the poete Sanazaro in hys *Archadia* calleth Sebeth, devydynge her selfe into two armes harde under the walls: whereof the one, fallynge into certaine pipes of lead, becomes serviceable by the arte of man to th' inhabitantes of Naples; the other, stretchynge towardes the champaine, refresheth as she passeth the meadowes and cornefeldes adjoyninge, with the dewe of her silver streames, and in the ende, yeldinge tribute to the greate flude Thetys, fauls with a softe noise into the sea, who receiveth her with an embrasyng worthie for so plaisante a neyghbour. Over which river is

DISCOURSE VI

builded a bridge, passible for horse and man, called Madalyne bridge, shrowded with the branches and longe spraies of certeine willowes, growynge on eyther side the broke, the commoditie of whych straite, with th'advauntage of the place offred theim selves (as it were) to assiste the enterprice of th'abbot in th'incounter of his pleasant enemy; who, disposed to more joye then her weary parentes, went alwaies affore theim, supplieng the time and tediousnes of their travaile, with sondrye plaisante devises. And as the heate of the day, with th'exercise of her body in goinge, had sett a broche the vaines of good blod through all her parts; wherby, to the pure complexion and white of her face, was added an orient die of red, so her heare, of the coollor of amber, curled by nature, and fallinge in lockes uppon her forhead, covered as then with an *escarfion* of the fashion of Pyemount, gave suche an increase to her beautie, that, wyth the helpe of the shade and shadowe of the tres, pauisinge the vyolence of the son, with the glee of the pleasante streame assistinge the naturall white and redd in her face, her eyes glistering as the cleare starres in the loftie skie, made her seame nothinge inferiour to the perfection of her whom the poetes have crowned wyth the title of a goddesse and quene of bewtie. Wherin, if this braverye of Parolina gave greate delite to the olde yeres of her parentes, who knewe the argumentes of youthfull joye whyche appeared in their daughter where but recreacions to mortefye in theym the wearines of the waye, it was nothinge in respecte to the pleasure of Gonsaldo; who, beholdinge the bewtie of his mistres, resemblinge afar of one of the *nimphes*, affirmed by Ovide to attende the goddes Diana goinge on huntinge, felt in him selfe a newe increase or supplie of desier, in such sorte that if hee had but the flea in his eare afore, it is nowe that he standes uppon thornes till he have geven a charge uppon the praye whiche seames so plesant of taste. And swearinge by the god of hys religion, not to lose the benefit of so sweate a morsell, began to encorage his men to dispose theym selves to performe the cause of theyr comming; warninge theym, notwithstandinge, in speciall sorte, to absteine from vyolence agaynste the mayde. 'And albeit,'

sayeth hee, 'the father is unarmed of any weapon, savinge his shorte wood knife, yet I am sewer, he will put himselfe in endevor to reskowe his daughter. Wherefore, whilest some are graplinge wyth the girle, the rest maye kepe the olde man occupied wyth terror and wordes of threatening feare.' Wherwyth, he cried to th' assalte. When ymediatly th' ambushe discovered theym selves, and in a moment envyroned the selly maide on al partes, with theyr swordes drawen, offringe to laye handes upon her and carie her to their maister. The miserable parents seinge theym at pointe to departe wyth the only pillor and proppe of their old yeres, ymagyning th' attempte to ymporte an effecte of greate mischiefe, retired to th' ordinarie armes and defenses of age, which were pitifull cries; which the villaines appaised ymediatly wyth threates of present death if they would not cease their doleful brute. And, for a more terror to the selly goldsmith, some of theim helde the pointe of hys sworde to his throate; who, notwithstanding, kept his daughter faste in his armes. And the mother would not bee dissevered from her childe, desieringe the traitors to discharge their crueltie uppon her and geve her daughter the favor of a safe libertie. But the more the desolate parentes filled their eares with requestes of compassion, the lesse pitie appered in the tyrantes, and greater desier grew in the ravynous abbot. What harte colde refrayne to distil droppes of blode on the behalfe of the desolation of these three wretched creatures; the father out of breathe and halfe dead wyth the force of skrichinge cries; the mother equall pertaker of his desaster and exceding her husband in sorow; the maide, more assured then her parentes in the conflicte of this misfortune, was at the pointe to use force agaynste her selfe, rather then to falle into the handes of th' execucioners of her pudicitie? I am sewer never a ladie of you all, reading this dollorous discourse, can abstaine from tearmes of detestacion agaynst the infamous and disordered desier of this disciple of Sathan; neyther conceile th' argument of compassion, seinge the virginitie of this mayde hangyng by so slender a fyllet, and readie to be offred, by compulcion, uppon the alter of fylthye ymmolacion, to glot

DISCOURSE VI

the lascivious thurst of this ravynous apostat; who, masqued in a visorne and wede of simplicitie, supported also by a coollour of fayned devocion, studieth nothinge but to pray upon the honor of widowes, abuse the absence of the maried man by corrupting hys wife, and subborn by inorderly meanes to seduce the chastetie of maides. But now to our Parolyna; who, as shee knewe the cause of this alaram to procede of her onlye, and, seinge the force of th'assailantes, had committed alreadie her parentes as it were into sewer warde of their power, and finding withall an ympossibilitie in her selfe to resiste the strengthe of the rest, determyned yet to supplie the defence of her honor wyth the benefit of a vertuous and valyaunt pollicie. Wherfore, chaunginge in a moment the amazed glee of complexion in her face into a regarde of assured joye, addressed her to th'abbot, wyth request that, afore she performed th'effecte of his desier, he wolde lende her his sworde. 'For no other entent,' saith she, 'but that my handes only may chasten the rigour of mine olde father, whose crabbed age, ignorante of civilitie, hathe beene hitherto th'only ympediment and staie of my goodwill to yelde you the hier and consideracion of your love; assuringe you that, upon the receite of the fyrst assurance of your affection towards me, I got the consent of my mother to be thankefull in sorte you required mee. And nowe if he should live, and witnes the consomacion of both our desiers, hys contynuall complaintes wold procure grevous punishment of th'offence, to the open slaunder of us both.' Wherwith th'olde man gyving undoubted credit to the dyssymuled discourse of hys daughter, the rather for that he noted no difference in her countenance and famyliar conference to th'abbot, cried out againste th'iniquitie she used to his honeste life passed, and present wrong she did to the vertue of his hoarie yeres; and, not knowing the meaning or misterie of her pollicie, forgat no termes of reproche or rigorous rebuke against his chast doughter. Of whose good will, Gonsaldo, beinge more then halfe assured, both for the small regarde she used to the threatning wordes of her father, and also the flattering tearmes of consent by her owne mouth, no lesse glad of the victorie then if he had

His letter.

alreadie passed the offer of al perills, performed the request of her who desiered nothing lesse then the death of her father and life of th' abbot. And putting his naked sworde into the hand of the coragious girle, offring withal to embrase her, as though the conquest wer alreadie performed, she flonge from hym in great rage, willing him to retire as he made accompte of his life. 'For,' sayth she, 'thou counterfeit ypocryte, yf thou offer eftesones to laye thy ravenouse handes upon me, thyne owne sworde shall geve the blowe of deadlye vengaunce to the fatall course of thy cursed dayes.' Wherupon, she addressed her to her father halfe dead of a frettinge anger, and purging hys collerike conceites agaynste her, tolde him he was not the father of a doughter that would justefie the glorie of his life passed wyth small vertue, and much lesse further his death by th' infamous renowme of her life; neyther do the thinge, eyther by accords or compulcion, that should have power to sturr up the blodd of shame in his face in what companie soever he came. 'But,' sayth shee, 'the mightie hande of God, restoringe thy weake age to a doble strengthe, and me to a perfecte skill in the use of this sworde which I have conquered of our common enemy, shal defende our honor agaynste the force of these rakshells, who seke to deprive me of the jewell of my reputacion.' Wherwith, she florished here and there, bestowinge her blowes with such skill to the disavantage of her enemye, that who hadde sene her desperat dealing wyth the sworde, would have judged that shee hadde bene traded in the only exercise of armes all the dayes of her life. Whiche stroke such soddaine corage and joye into the dead hart of her olde father, that he advowed his life in the honest quarell of his doughters chastetie; and likewise the careful mother gave assistance to the magnanimite of her childe, accordinge to her feble force; whyche so occupied the place for a tyme that th' olde man, and the two ympes derived of the blodd of th' auncient Amazons, laide so harde to the charge of the monke and his souldiours, that in one instant the whole ambush of traitors was out of breathe. But Gonsaldo, knowyng by this laste deceite of the maide that there was neither love

DISCOURSE VI

nor frendly meanynge in her, began to convert his affection into an humor of fury, commaundinge the sworde to bee taken out of the handes of the new champian, wyth expresse charge, notwithstanding, to use no violence agaynste her. Whewyth the medley grewe ymediatlye soo hoate on bothe sides, that the father, to defende the honor of hys daughter, used no care to his owne savegard; and the daughter, to prevent the violence of her bodie, was desperat of her life. The abbot on th'other syde, seinge there was no waye to prevent his perill but by the overthrowe of his enemyes, gave ende to the conflicte by th'extremitie of force, leavinge the aged parentes on grownde maymed and halfe deade with the number of mortall woundes. But the daughter, lightly hurte in the arme, seinge that the wante of strength wolde yelde her prisoner at last to the enemye of her honor, thinkinge nothinge lesse, notwithstanding, then to satisfie his desier any way then by her deathe, used the benefit of her fortune and at unwares reached Gonsaldo a greate blowe thwarte the face, making a blodie podell, or bayne for flees in the sommer, uppon the nose of mayster abbot. Wherwith, holdinge the pointe of her sworde in her hande, cryinge uppon th'aide of th'almightie—to whom, according to the shortnes of her tyme, she commended the healthe of her soule—she leapte from above the bridge into the cristal waves of the cleare Zebete, chosinge rather to builde her tombe within the bellye of some fyshe or monster of the sea, then to yelde a forcible offring of the firste frutes of her virginitie to the polluted ymage, or ydoll, of the Synagoge of Babylon. But God, not willinge as yet to deprive the worlde of so rare a mirror of vertue, gave her such force agaynste the rage of the streame, that she kept breath til certeine passengers, leaping into the river, recovered her wyth diligence of swymminge, and brought her on live to the shore; deserving better the benefit of longer life then the papistical monke, who, seing the ende and successe of his enterprise, retired into his abbaie wyth his skorched face, wythout showing hymself any more in the stretes of Naples upon his sturring jennetts, for the love of his lady.

BINDING SECT. APR 3 1981

Robarts Library
DUE DATE:
1 FEB 1999

Fines 50¢ per day

Please return books to the
Library to which they belong

For Touch Tone telephone
renewals call 971-2400
Hours:
*Mon. to Fri.* 8:30 am to midnight
*Saturday* 9 am to 10 pm
*Sunday* 1 pm to 10 pm

For telephone renewals

PQ
4606
Z34
1898
V.1

Bandello, Matteo
Certain tragical
discourses of Bandello